



THE GAMES IS A TOUGH FOR MOBS☆

07

三嶋与夢

イラスト／孟達

GC NOVELS

# **THE WORLD OF OTOME GAMES IS TOUGH FOR MOBS**

**– Otome Game Sekai wa Mob ni Kibishii Sekai Desu –**

**- VOLUME 7 -**

**- AUTHOR-**

**Mishima Yomu**

**Wai**

**- ILLUSTRATOR-**

**Monda**

**[ SirPhoenix88 | bakapervert ]**

二鳴与夢  
イラスト／孟達

モブに敵は  
世界は  
世界です 07

THE WORLD OF OTOME GAMES IS A TOUGH FOR MOBS.



共和国のある大陸より離れた空。

そこで光学迷彩を解除して船体を出現させた  
ルクシオンは、子機とのリンクが切れたことに  
驚いていた。

「——本気なのですね、

イデアル』

 **〈ルクシオン〉**

旧人類 移民船

「俺も愛している。  
一緒に来い、ノエル」

告白の答えを待つノエルに、  
俺は——愛していると告げる。

「嘘吐き」

ノエルは笑った。  
笑つて——俺に言う。



モーブ  
魔  
世界  
です  
07

乙女ゲー  
世界は  
THE WORLD OF OTOME GAMES IS A TOUGH FOR NOIS.

プロローグ	007
第01話 「親子」	028
第02話 「ラーシエル神聖王国」	051
第03話 「共和国の意地」	072
第04話 「姐御」	094
第05話 「裏切り者」	116
第06話 「革命」	143
第07話 「姉妹喧嘩」	168
第08話 「親子の絆」	186
第09話 「黒幕」	207
第10話 「一番危険な男」	233
第11話 「マスター」	268
第12話 「嘘吐き」	293
第13話 「報酬」	307
エピローグ	340
追想 「イデアルの約束」	345

# PROLOGUE

I went to the market during the early morning on a holiday.

The market square was full of stalls, and was both busy and lively, which made me forget how cold it was. The market was surrounded by buildings, and as the morning sunlight came through the gaps it looked like a setting worthy of a fantasy world.

Vigorous shopkeepers raised their voices, advertising their goods. Shoppers were also haggling aggressively, their voices getting louder. Due to the amount of noise, you had to raise your own voice well to carry out any negotiations.

"They are in high spirits this morning."

I said with a still sleepy expression, and then my partner Luxion, flying next to me, replied in a low voice.

[Master... you always seem sleepy in the morning. It's your fault for staying up so much. You should try to lead a healthier life.]

"I'm a night person, you know."

As always, I gave him an unmotivated excuse. It's not that I'm actually nocturnal, but I wanted to reply to his overly sarcastic and righteous argument. Luxon seemed to understand that as well.

[Your excuses are sloppy.]

"Give me a break, I'm tired." They woke me up just after sunrise, so there's no way I'm excited after being forced to go shopping.

The reason I'm at the market so early is because Marie woke me up.

In the morning she said, "I'm busy, so take care of things."

I felt frustrated for being used by that little sister from my past life, but there was also a reason why I couldn't reject her...

"I'm sorry, Leon. It is very difficult for me to carry everything by myself."

Noelle was shopping this time.

She has long hair combed to one side with a single side ponytail. Previously her hair color was blonde, but now the tips were pink, which made her stand out. Noelle was dressed in her house clothes, but she had her hair done early in the morning and was wearing light makeup.

Most people don't bother to make even this much of an effort this early in the morning, and that is why she stood out, attracting the attention of the people around her, especially men.

Seeing Noelle's somewhat pained expression, I apologized for the complaints I had just voiced. "I'm sorry, I wasn't blaming you, Noelle, it's Marie's fault."

"But I'm the one you are helping."

My job this morning was to carry the purchases, so Noelle was a bit sad, thinking that perhaps she was inconveniencing me. In the midst of this awkwardness, Luxion joined the conversation, as was his custom to annoy me.

[Your insensitivity is admirable, as always.]

- Shut up.

[Oh, are you angry because I told the truth? First of all, it's your fault for not thinking about how Noelle will react to hearing you complain out loud.]

Luxion's words really bothered me.

"Seriously, you should try to be a little more nice to me." Do you think your words don't hurt me?

[You want me to be nice when you are clearly being mean to somebody else in front of me? What a practical joke.]

Do you really hate me so much!? And when have I hurt someone?

"I am a peace-loving man who is kind to himself and to others."

[Can't you be more realistic in regards to yourself? Not to mention, it's a contradiction for somebody to say they love peace when they wreak as much havoc in the country as you do.]

"It's not a contradiction in my mind, so it's okay."

[Your standards are too lenient. It has been almost a year since you came to study in this country and you've already forgotten how many times you've caused a disturbance?]

It is true that I did some damage in the Republic.

The first time was against the bastard Pierre of House Flavel. That is when Einhorn put an end to the undefeated myth of the republic, who had long boasted that they were invincible.

The second time was when we faced the Loic of House Barriere. The yandere Loic was stalking Noelle, so I broke into their wedding and stole the bride. I then used Arroganz and broke the pride of the Republic.

The third time was in a battle against Serge, when he tried to sacrifice Louise. I also beat him into the ground.

Wait... did I really get into three great fights in less than a year?

- Three times. See, I haven't forgotten.

[It's good that you remember it. In that case, since you remember, doesn't it seem a bit contradictory to you that you claim to be a lover and a defender of peace?]

"I did not start a single one of those fights. They raised their arms against me first."

[But you provoked them to do it. If the Republic was wrong about anything, it was in accepting you as an exchange student.]

"But you also made a huge mess of this place! Don't say it like I'm the only one to blame, because you're just as bad!!"

[Thankfully I am not human. And since you, Master, are the one in command over me, you must take responsibility.]

Since I was the one who had given that order, I couldn't reply, so I closed my mouth and bit my lip in frustration. At that, Noelle was watching our conversation with a smile on her face. Apparently she was having a lot of fun watching us act this way.

"The two of you get along very well, don't you?"

Hearing Noelle's words, we both responded at the same time.

- What? Are you blind?

[Noelle, I recommend that you get your eyes check out.]

After we spoke and shut up at exactly the same time, Noelle displayed another big grin. That smile, plus the rays of the morning sun, made her look radiant with light.

"Even if you say otherwise, you both get along pretty well, that's for sure."





—Eh ~

I was about to disagree, when Luxion released a small bolt of electricity, giving me a small but painful shock. After that, Noelle took the shopping list from her pocket.

"You also look sleepy, so let's finish shopping."

When Noelle said that, Luxon spoke with a voice that only I could hear.

[...Master, aren't you going to respond to Noelle's feelings?]

If I had the guts to do it in the first place, I wouldn't even be going through all of this. What's more...

"Weren't you supposed to report to Angie and Livia if I cheated on them with someone else? Why are you prompting me to do it?"

I replied in a whisper, and then Luxion spoke to me in a slightly more serious tone.

[I will not give any cheating reports as it's only with Noelle. Also, if you say so, we could bring her to the kingdom of Holfault. What is the problem, then?]

The problem is that they were ignoring my own feelings.

Noelle was walking in front of me, browsing the stalls as she searched for items on the list. Apparently, she was already used to shopping in the early morning.

She was a girl with a cheerful and pleasant personality who was also a lot of fun to hang out with. By this I don't imply that either Angie or Livia are boring, but Noelle certainly had a charm that the two of them didn't. She was also pretty, and had a strong moral character.

I sincerely wanted her to be happy, but I wonder if it's okay for me to be that person. That is why I wanted her to find a better partner, and not choose someone like me.

"Both you and Marie expect too much of me."

I had already realized that Marie has been sending Noelle and me to the market to buy some things so that we can be alone together. I'm sure she thinks that she is helping Noelle in her own way, but it's unnecessary meddling.

[I don't expect too much from you, but I don't expect too little either. You could say that I hope you fix your way of being such a coward.]

"I'm not a coward."

After denying those words, Luxion continued as if he was expecting that answer.

[Oh? Remember when you got engaged to Anjelica and Olivia? If I recall correctly, you were such a coward that the two of them had to beg you.]-

"Don't say it that way. That's playing dirty."

I knew I'd lose if we kept arguing, so I cut off the conversation.

Noelle stopped in front of a stall and began haggling, having found the last ingredients she was looking for. She then cutely asked to have an overall discount, and the owner of the store, an elderly man, blushed as he gave a discount for her sweetness.

If I had asked him, he would have given me a resounding no. This is one of the perks of being a pretty girl.

After witnessing that, a middle-aged woman with large piercings was haggling at another nearby stall. I watched for a bit in that direction; the woman was clearly bullying the shop owner.

"Hey, this is being eaten by bugs. Do you want to sell something like this at the same price as the rest? No one is going to buy it."

"N-No, they just ate the surface."

"In that case, I'll buy the rest off of you for the common price, and you'll give me the one that was eaten as an extra. Nobody else will buy it anyways, right?"

"That doesn't sound like a good deal, but..... I understand."

"In that case, give me this and this too."

- Ehhh???

When the woman selected other vegetables that had also been (slightly) eaten by

insects, she insisted that it be given also for free. In the end, the seller agreed because it would be better than going unsold, and the woman bought several vegetables for the price of one.

Apparently it no longer has much to do with whether a woman is pretty or not.

"Some women have great personalities."

Noelle's way of being was quite innocent compared to what I had just seen.

When I was looking at the woman's back in surprise and admiration, my gaze stopped on a suspicious shop. It was a small stand in the middle of two buildings, with products that appeared to be medicines. Several customers were browsing the merchandise, and they seemed to look like adventurers.

- Adventurers of the Republic?

Since I came to the Alzer Republic, the only adventurer I had ever seen was Serge. Unlike the Kingdom of Holfaul, adventurers have a low social status in this country.

The customers quickly bought the medicines and left. I got a little closer to see, but the salesman was covering his face with a hood and I couldn't recognize him.

- Welcome.

He welcomed me, but his attitude was clearly unsympathetic. I thought it was just because he was interacting with me, but it seemed that the merchant himself was unfriendly by nature. The owner spread a cloth with various products on it, and I bent down and picked one up.

- Is this a drug?

After muttering, the merchant began to explain abruptly.

"It's a body-strengthening drug, although I doubt that somebody like you needs it." Luxon began his explanation with a voice that only I could hear.

[It's the body-strengthening drug Serge uses. This appears to be a spoiled product that is less effective than the one he used.]

Medicine to strengthen the body... this was another concept that came out in the game. For example, this is used to temporarily increase status or increase attack power.

I picked the drugs in their glass bottles and began to compare the red ones with the blue ones.

- Hmm, that sounds interesting. Give me one of each type you have.

The owner was a bit confused when I told him I would buy it. But once he knew I was going to buy them, his demeanor softened even more than before.

"Just be careful when using them. You have to allow at least six hours to take the next dose. If you use them continuously, it will put a lot of strain on your body."

I listened with curiosity to the seller as I handed him the money, and he took the drugs from the bottles and placed them in a wooden box.

There are precautions like real medicine. In the game I preferred to use all the ones I had at the same time.

After taking the wooden box and walking away from the stand, I started talking to Luxion again.

"It sounds like a real medication."

Speaking with a laugh, Luxion answered me wearily.

[It's not like a medication, it is a real medication.]

- Ehhh?

[It looks like you've made a bad purchase. This is the downside to having knowledge from the game itself.]

Luxion warned me while making a pained expression.

[To explain it to you in a way that you understand, it's basically the same as getting high... Do you think highly effective drugs do not have a negative side effect on the body?]

...Although temporary, fitness-enhancing drugs have no downsides --- at least, that is how it was in the game.

In other words, the game characters that I applied the medicines on one after another... ended up overdosing?

"I bought them, but can't I use them?" I wanted to use them like a trump card in an emergency.

Seeing it used by Serge before, I too wanted to keep them like an ace up my sleeve.

"Now that I think about it, that bastard used several." Is higher quality medicine safer to use, then?

When I fought Serge to rescue Louise, he had used more than two consecutive doses. I thought there was no problem if it was high quality, but Luxion denied that.

[There may be some with minimal side effects, but I doubt Serge was using them at recommended dosages.]

Certainly Serge looked tough from the outside, and his words and actions were as rude as his appearance. He did not seem to follow the way the drug was supposed to be used. In that case... did he really go that far just to fight me?

No, wasn't it actually a drug that was very effective and had few downsides?

- Oh now I see. The drug he took was very weak, right? I mean, I knocked him down with just one punch, after all.

After listening to my thoughts, Luxon agreed with me.

[It is very probable. If even you can beat him, Serge's abilities are much lower than expected.]

- ...certainly that was what I wanted to say, but why do you have to take advantage of my words to emphasize the low opinion you have of me?

[It's what you get for your day-to-day behavior. Even if...]

Luxon continued to deny the use of drugs for performance enhancement.

[Before you think about using drugs, why don't you try to train your body instead? Also, I don't recommend using those kinds of drugs. Leaving aside the compatibility with your physical constitution, drugs are not good.]

- My constitution? Oh, maybe you can make a safe and effective strengthening drug? [... In theory it is possible, but do you really intend to use them?]

"Well, as a secret weapon it would be useful, right?"

I decided to have Luxon analyze the medicine I received and come up with a body-strengthening medicine that would suit my constitution. After putting away the small box, I walked over to Noelle, who was waving to me with one hand while carrying a heavy shopping bag in the other.

"Leon, where did you go?"

"I just went to see something that caught my attention. Give me the bag, I'll carry it."

I took the bag from Noelle's hand and then started walking beside her. The two of us continued to walk in the middle of a lively and noisy environment. Noelle appeared somewhat embarrassed when she spoke to me; apparently she wanted to bring up the subject of changes in the mansion.

"Now that I think about it, the mansion is much more lively and noisier than before. Julius and the others act too much on their own."

Noelle said with an awkward smile, and yes, I agreed with her.

"Well, Julius went crazy over fried chicken skewers, and Jilk's collection of antiques only got worse." He only brings garbage, and one corner of the mansion already looks like a dump. Whereas Brad... umm, let's just say he's the one who only got a little worse.

We started talking about the five idiots, the prince and his minions who had only worsened since they arrived in the republic of Alzer.

Noelle said with a complicated expression...

"I don't have any room to talk because honestly, they're helping me a lot by letting me stay at the house, but they really should do something with Greg-san and Chris-san."

The truth is, it is uncomfortable to have to see them almost naked walking throughout the mansion.

"It's because they are the primordial idiots."

Noelle always had a tired expression from having to see the bare skin of some boys she really didn't want to see.

Greg had become obsessed with weight training and was walking around half naked. At first he wore a tank top, but after he started training he stopped wearing it to show his muscles. Marie had already kicked him many times and told him to wear something, but he insisted on not wearing anything. According to him, his reason was, "I want Marie to see these muscles, the result of my training." To make matters worse, Marie herself was glad to see that. She would always say, "Oh God ~ put on some clothes!" while gazing happily at his body.

These guys have no salvation. The last one was Chris... he also walked around the mansion half naked, only covering himself with a loincloth. Even if he wore a shirt or jacket over it, underneath he was always wearing a loincloth. Every day he cleaned the bathroom like he was obsessed with it, and lately he was working properly. But moving around half naked made none of that matter!

It was a really unique situation, I would say, although none of them did any harm other than Jilk. What's more, even Jilk seemed harmless if only viewed from afar. His way of behaving on a day-to-day basis was magnificent, worth taking as an example; but instead he was very easily fooled and other times he even got into illegal things, so it was a great disadvantage for us. Simply put, Jilk was hopeless trash. The others were harmless, but weird.

Who would have guessed that those guys would get to this point? Until last year they were all full-fledged nobles, and one even the crown prince, but now it was not even funny to see them fallen to this point. Just because of that, because I acknowledge her efforts to be with those five idiots, is that I can be nice to Marie from time to time.

My younger sister in my previous life, who tried to live off the five idiots in this world relying only on the information she had obtained from the completed game... now she was nothing more than those guys' babysitter. Apparently Marie was having a hard time taking care of those five, as they were all idiots. "The misfortune of others tastes like honey!" they say, so that means I can be nice to Marie too.

"Do you want me to force them to get dressed?"

I proposed to Noelle to make Greg and Chris put clothes on...

Wait, why am I proposing to make those two dress up? They, who are my enemies, people I hated with all my being.

Noelle, somewhat surprised, rejected my offer.

"I-I don't think it's necessary."

We were still in the winter season. Still, I doubted that would matter to the idiots who spent their time half naked inside the mansion.

"Now that I remember, there's something else I want to buy and it's not on the list. Leon, can I go check the stores one more time?"

"The baggage carriers will silently obey."

That's what it means to be a boy from the Kingdom of Holfaul. However, it seems to be different in the Republic.

"Don't worry. I'll carry the other bags." She didn't like that only I was carrying her baggage. Hearing Noelle's warm words, tears almost came to my eyes.

Ah, the Republic is wonderful!

Seeing my expression of excitement, Noelle had a complicated expression on her face. -... I always ask myself this every day: why do you get so excited about such normal things?

"The normal things you mean are merciful actions done by a saint."

I wonder how many times we've been saying the same thing between ourselves.

Noelle always responded with a "Are the women of the kingdom really that bad? Both of them seemed pretty good to me," while looking at me doubtfully. The women of the kingdom Noelle had encountered could be counted on the fingers of one hand. Also, Angie and Livia were already different from the women of the kingdom, so they didn't count.

The girls of the kingdom... It wouldn't make sense to compare those who are born in a family of barons with those that are born in one of counts, for example. "Only part of them are terrible... or rather they were."

- They were? Why do you say it in past tense?
- Because I came to study here before hearing that they've already calmed down a bit.
- Calmed down?
- Will they improve?

Many things happened and nowadays the academy was trying to correct this extremely elitist behavior of girls towards boys. As I was already here before I could see the result of that new education, I did not know how they are right now.

Noel looked for a greengrocer this time. After finding him she walked towards them. All the fruits were fresh, but Noel chose the best among those.

The Lespinasse family... an important noble family in the republic and formerly part of the Great Nobles of the country when they were still seven and not six. And Noel, being a survivor of that family, was actually something like a princess. That is why it felt strange to see her observing and comparing some fruits with such eagerness in a public market.

"Lord, give me these!"

Noelle said, pointing to the seller the fruits he wanted to buy. The seller saw me, who was behind Noel, and then out of nowhere he added another fruit.

"This is a gift from me to you two, lovebirds. Boy what a good wife you chose, I envy you.

Said the salesman, laughing eloquently. Meanwhile, Noelle and I look at each other with an awkward smile. We didn't want to reject the seller's good intentions, so we decided to say nothing and accept it. After taking all the bags, we walked towards the mansion.

Is it nine-something right now? I think we spent a lot of time going through various stores.

Since I hadn't had breakfast, I couldn't stand an empty stomach anymore, but apparently Noelle didn't even remember that she hadn't had breakfast either. She had not stopped thinking about the seller's words for a long time. She was somewhat embarrassed, her cheeks flushed... and then she began to speak nervously.

"I-I didn't think that they would see us as a couple, hahaha... Does it bother you?" It doesn't bother me. In fact, I thought that had bothered you.

- Not really. Didn't it bother you?

- Hey? C-Of course not, not at all!

Seeing her deny that so strongly, I thought.

Can a girl as good as her really fall in love with someone like me? Someday, I'm sure someone with the right to have Noelle's love will show up. That's what I think. But as for me, I don't consider myself worthy of having it. What about Angie and Livia? Well, they are also magnificent women, who in spite of everything decided to choose me... I wonder what would have happened if before the two of them I had met Noelle...

As we were walking down the street, I saw a coffee shop open. As it was the weekend, many couples were seen coming and going. There were some who were even happily chatting about what to do from now on. Nearby there was a lonely man, looking very uncomfortable around the couples, and I could understand him perfectly.

"People seem to be having fun this early."

I said that and Noel tried to say something, but in the end she closed her mouth. - What's going on?

"N-nothing! We better get back quickly, Marie-chan and the rest are waiting for us." Noel tried to hurry home and this time I looked back at the cafeteria.

"Let them starve, we'd better go get something for breakfast first and then brag about it to Marie when we get there."

If we tell her that we went to eat after finishing shopping, Marie will surely grind her teeth in envy... Sometimes I wonder if Marie is really happy, considering that she is envious of such trivial things as these. And that before she always said quietly "I'll go eat out, I don't like to cook ~". The universe is really confusing.

I took Noelle's hand to lead her to the cafeteria and then we sat at a double table. After receiving the menu, Noelle put down the bags and spoke to me. I assumed that her discomfort comes from the noteworthy number of couples that were around us.

"Ahahaha, I-I'm sorry."

"Don't apologize, I was hungry anyway." I think I'll eat something heavy. "If you eat so much, you won't get breakfast."

"I'm still growing, so no problem."

Youth is incredible. No matter how much I ate, I could still feel hungry for a long time. As I was looking at the menu, Luxion spoke to me in a low voice.

"Sometimes I am speechless when you take such daring actions despite being a coward." Although, well, even in these situations you don't do much of a thing, so I guess you're still a coward.

...Is he never going to shut up?

I looked at Noelle and she was looking at the menu while muttering "Ummm ~ Should I order this? Ah, but I don't want to eat that much either ~ ". She looked really cute wondering what to order. After looking away from the menu, she raised her head and saw me; she realized that I was watching her. Then, her cheeks began to slowly blush.

I wonder where girls like her were in my past life... Although, well, I'm pretty happy right now, so I have no right to complain.

"Don't look at me, it's embarrassing."

- Hey? What's wrong?

- ...It's embarrassing that you are looking at me while I am seriously thinking about what to eat.

Noelle said, embarrassed, and I couldn't help but laugh.

- Why are you laughing?!

"Well, I just thought that you were extremely cute." We better order fast. Noelle put on

an angry expression, but it was clear by her voice that she was enjoying herself.

"Leon, sometimes you're pretty mean to me. Also, even if you don't realize it, you are quite a womanizer."

- No way. I am a shy, pure and kind boy.

- ...I forgot to add liar. I still can't believe that you tricked Louise like that. Despite saying that, Noelle didn't really blame me for it.

"I'm so honest and kind that it really was hard to lie even if it was for someone else's sake. Rather, I'd rather you comfort me for that."

—As always, you have an answer for everything... Well, it doesn't bother me though.

After that, the topic was over, so I raised my hand and called the waitress. Suddenly I realized how a lonely boy sitting nearby looked at me and clicked his tongue. Apparently I was the only one who had a feeling of brotherhood. It seems that he thought I was eating with my girlfriend. Luxion muttered.

[Looks like you're having a lot of fun... By the way, should I count this as cheating?] Please don't tell. I'm just having breakfast with a good friend!

# CHAPTER 1

## PARENT AND CHILD

The Alzer Republic Academy was in its third semester.

It was still cold and dim after school.

When classes were over, students would leave the classroom and go home because there were no club activities. The only ones who stayed were the teachers and some students.

Meanwhile, I led Marie into a room that appears to be the student orientation room of the Academy.

Mr. Clement was the one who was waiting for us there.

He is a nice guy with a large body and dressed in muscular armor! But he's a master in a tight t-shirt with an effeminate undertone.

He has a thick beard and looks dark after shaving.

Regardless of what he looks like, he is a kind teacher.

- Hello. Eh? Is it just Mr. Clement?

After bravely greeting Mr. Clément and entering the room, Marie was disgusted to find that the person she was looking for was not there.

Mr. Clement was sitting in a chair with his thick arms folded.

"Miss Lelia is not able to come yet."

It was rare to see a teacher with such a strong appearance speaking with such an effeminate voice.

Marie and I looked at each other, shrugged, and sat down in the chairs already prepared

for us.

I decided to just talk to Mr. Clement and kill time.

"Putting that aside, I didn't know that you were a gentleman of the Lespinasse family."

When I spoke of that, Mr. Clement seemed nostalgic.

"Noelle doesn't remember either, does she?" I'm a bit disappointed, but they were both five years old when we parted ways. It can not be helped.

Marie leaned against the desk and spoke lazily.

—It's strange that I don't remember a character like you. So what are you going to do from now on?

To that question, Mr. Clement answered without concern.

"I'll stay by Miss Leila's side and protect her." I'm sure Miss Noelle... She would surely feel more relieved with Mr. Leon at her side, right? After all, he is the guardian of the sacred tree.

Guardian... That is the title of the person who has the highest emblem of the blessings given by the Sacred Tree.

It is given to those whom the Sacred Tree deems worthy of protection.

The sapling of the Sacred Tree that I got chose me because of whatever I thought.

Originally, one of the capture targets in the second game would be chosen as a guardian... and he was supposed to hang out with Noelle.

This has caused my plans to fall apart.

Looking at the clock in the room, the scheduled time had already passed.

Originally right now they were going to talk about what would be done later with Lelia Beltre... No, now it's "Lelia Zel Lespinasse".

I was supposed to talk to a girl from my native country who had been reincarnated in

the Republic.

"That Lelia does take a long time."

When I expressed my concern, Mr. Clement apologized.

- I am sorry. Miss Lelia is also busy. The republic has much to do, and she has been recognized as the abandoned daughter of the Lespinasse family. It's hard to find time to talk to her.

Reincarnated as Noelle's twin sister, Lelia was a survivor of a great former noble house, the Lespinasse family. Now that that is known, she seems to be busy now.

Marie was frustrated.

- I'm busy too! I want to make dinner! At this rate, Julian will prepare skewers on his own. Last time it was the same too, so I'm getting tired of it!

Whenever he sees the opportunity, Julian makes some kabobs and calls it dinner.

...And it wasn't just once or twice.

He became an unbalanced cook who wanted to eat kabobs every day, and both Marie and I were concerned.

Prepare meals and even clean dishes.

In fact, he even gets upset if we touch his tools without permission.

The current Julian is so much better than when he didn't do housework like he used to.

But... I also don't want to have skewers prepared for me every day.

Mr. Clement was confused, but apologized to Marie.

- I am sorry. Recently, due to Emile's errands, Lelia has been going out more frequently.

When Emile's name came up, Marie sighed.

- Emile again? No, he's her fiancé so I can't blame her ~

Emile..."Emile Laz Plevén" is Lelia's fiancé. He was one of the conquest targets in the second game, and even if you failed to capture the others, if you chose Emile, you could see the end without having a game over.

Therefore, the players called Emile "Safe Tile-Emile".

What a horrible name.

As I was talking to Mr. Clement and waiting, I heard some footsteps.

When the door opened violently, Lelia was standing there, breathing heavily.

She has the same side ponytail hairstyle as Noelle, but her hair is soft and straight.

Her hair is deep pink and, unlike Noelle, her eyes show a fatigued atmosphere.

The two are twin sisters, so they look a lot alike... but Lelia has smaller breasts than Noelle (?). Because of that, Lelia has a slimmer figure.

On Lelia's side, floated a sphere of a different color from Luxon's. It was Ideal, a blue sphere and a red eye.

When he looked at me, he moved his single red eye vertically to say hello.

Then after Lelia took a look at us, she brought her eyes to Mr. Clement.

"I'm sorry, but the meeting is canceled." Clement, Emile's car will go through the front door, so you are coming too.

- Miss Lelia? I didn't think you had plans today.

Mr. Clement seems to be managing the schedule as if he is also Lelia's secretary. Is there a plan that Mr. Clement doesn't even know about?

Marie got up from her seat, pointed at Lelia, and screamed.

- Do not ignore us! We have a lot to discuss!

There were many things to talk about.

We had to talk about what was going to happen next to the Alzer Republic, the stage of the second game.

We were also going to talk about Noelle and the capture targets.

...The most important at this time was also Serge, a capture target who is missing.

The Rault family is one of the six great nobles.

Serge was the legitimate son of that family, but now he is missing.

There were many things I'd like to discuss, but Lelia had her own plans and couldn't talk to us.

She was also dissatisfied with her plans.

- I have my own affairs! Emile asked me to participate no matter what...

Lelia's gaze went to Ideal as she searched for some excuse.

Ideal was looking at me. No... I was looking at Luxon who was hiding near me.

[I am sorry. To protect Miss Lelia's social status, I can't make an exception. Can you please understand?]

Lelia's social status. I cannot argue strongly when it is said that it is necessary to protect your position in this world.

We all have a life.

"Become a sacrifice for world peace!"... Only a few people can understand that.

And Marie and I are part of those people.

We can't blame Lelia, we have no choice but to accept it.

"Make sure you create space for us to chat next time."

Ideal affirmed to me as if to say emphasizing a "Of course!".

[Next time, we will definitely make time for you... Come on, Miss Lelia. Emile is waiting.]

Lelia reluctantly followed him.

If you look at the situation, it is possible that Lelia was avoiding us.

We looked at each other and spoke briefly.

"I'm leaving, but keep your eye out for Serge."

Marie, who had her left hand on her hip, gestured with her right hand for her to leave.

"Okay, go to Emile."

When Lelia left, Mr. Clement apologized to us.

Thus, today we could not argue with Lelia.

And the days passed without being able to discuss pending issues.



I took the tram with Marie to go home.

We were the only passengers and the inside of the train was lit and the outside was dark.

It's already night.

Marie was mad at Lelia. There is a part of her that is convinced she can't be helped, but she still looked unhappy.

- Why do I have to take orders from her !? First of all, wasn't Lelia the closest to Serge? I'm not your maid!

- It can't be helped. She also wants to protect her status, right?

"I understand, but...

The public image is not something that can be taken lightly, and it is important that it is often neglected throughout history.

Aside from the main characters in the story, it's hard for people like us, as background characters, to ignore this and live.

It is the same as in my previous life, but this world is culturally behind the world of my previous life.

It is a world where social appearance cannot be ignored.

- Aren't you mad, Oni-chan?

- Of course I am, but I'm more mature than you, so I'm not showing it. But what is so significant that even Luxion is looking for it but cannot find it?

Luxon and Ideal were looking for Serge, but even though it's been a while since the start of the third semester, there was no sign of him.

Luxon joined our conversation while hiding.

[He is likely out of the country or hiding in plain sight.]

It is a bother if you are fleeing abroad.

However, hiding through the eyes of the Luxons is also troublesome.

Serge... In the game, he is a young savage who yearns to be an adventurer. Rebelliously speaking, it sounds good, but from my point of view, he was a tough and ruthless man.

Although he was adopted by the Rault family, this caused a rift between him and his family.

In the game, Mr. Alberg, the head of the Rault family, is the final boss, Serge distrusts his stepfather and cooperates with the main character.

...This is Serge's behavior in the game, but from my point of view, it's a bit different.

Alberg does not seem like a final boss, he is the most credible of the six great nobles.

And the Rault family was accepting Serge. Unless he is being harassed without my knowledge, although it is unlikely.

I heard it from Louise, but I can't say Serge is not faulty.

Leaving aside the question of which is worse, where are the causes of our differences?

- Why does he want to burn his family?

Marie was curious about my murmurs.

- What are you talking about?

- It's about Serge. If Mr. Alberg is a bad person and that's why he squirmed, I'd understand. But we are talking about Mr. Alberg, right? He's a good enough person from my point of view.

- Your standards are unreliable, but it is certainly strange. Also, in the game, I was strong enough to fight, but losing to my brother in one fell swoop, that's not right.

- ...Hey, how much do you underestimate me? How much do you think we've worked hard with the poor noble boys?

Even with this, I have been doing my best in the academy shedding tears of blood.

I have to give a gift to the girls at an event that happens every month.

The poor noble boys challenge the dungeon to win the gifts.

The deeper the dungeon, the steeper and more dangerous it gets, but the more money you can get.

The poor noble boys worked together to challenge dangerous dungeons and earn money.

And everything to get married! For that purpose... I really made an effort to shed blood.

When I remembered it, it almost made me want to cry.

Marie looked disinterested as she wiped my tears on her sleeves.

"But the girls used to sell the gifts they had at the pawn shops."

"I know, and I cried many times with my friends." Anyway, unlike Serge, I'm not an adventurer for fun!

It wasn't for fun. It was to give a good appearance and marriage!

...Although the reason I try so hard is also terribly pathetic.

Marie didn't seem very interested in what I was saying or doing, and took pity on Serge.

- Even so, isn't it terrible for a warrior to be knocked down with one blow? Men are troublesome when pride is broken. After all, they are proud creatures.

- Don't talk about a man like that.

- Oh? I know more about this than you do, brother. Because they have strange pride, all boys are easy to handle.

Did Marie forget that she was cheated on by such a man?

I laughed when I saw Marie make that comment.

Marie looked at me, perhaps disgusted by what I did.

- What?

- Is nothing. I find it wonderful to hear a woman who thinks she knows a man and has been hurt by him.

- Shut up, incompetent!

- ...I will reduce your living expenses.

Having trouble arguing with Marie, I brought up the subject of living expenses as a last resort.

Then Marie weakly collapsed and bowed to the ground.

- My smart, brave and marvelous Onii-sama! Please don't cut down on my living expenses! Please... I really can't live like this. I don't care about those five, but I don't want Kyle and Cara to end up on the street! Help me, Onii-chan!

I can't help but feel vulnerable to the word "help me."

Also, apart from Marie, I wanted to avoid harming Kyle and Cara.

The five idiots? They are strong, so they can survive without problems.

- As long as you understand your position.

While I was laughing, Marie made a look of regret, saying “Gunununu”.

Luxon, observing our interaction, replied as usual.

[As usual, Master is very kind to Marie.]

- I'm basically a nice person to everyone.

[A kind person would not break the pride of a defeated enemy. I'm sure Serge has a grudge against you, Master.]

- It's his fault for losing to me.

[It's quite a feat to be able to say that with my help. Don't you think that's cowardly?]

- I don't think so. Also, someone once told me. "To be called a coward is a compliment."

[According to Master, you say that others are hateful and cannot be helped.]

- But I'm very nice!

Marie was saying "What are you talking about?" But we ignore her.

We got off when the tram came to a stop near our house.



The house I use in the Alzer Republic is a magnificent mansion.

I also live there with Marie and the others.

The study abroad period is running out and living separately has become problematic.

When we entered the mansion, Yumeria, who had noticed our presence, came running over.

—Welcome back, Leon... Oh!

In a hurry, she stumbled and slid headlong in front of us.

She hit her face on the ground and it seemed to hurt herself.

- A-Are you okay?

When I called out to her with concern, Yumeria, whose face was red and puffy, had watery eyes.

- I-I'm f-ineph.

Yumeria, who had bitten her tongue at the end, is a petite elf with large breasts.

She looks young and seems to be our age, but she is the mother of a son.

Her long green hair revealed the long ears that are characteristic of an elf. Her tender and gentle eyes are yellow, and although she is a bit careless... she is a beautiful girl. No, she's a beautiful woman.

- You don't have to rush.

Speaking gently, Yumeria thanked me. However, next to me, Marie showed a dissatisfied attitude and said: "Geh! You're being all servile!"

What's wrong with that?

While we were making noise at the entrance, another maid approached, this is a beautiful woman with glasses that was sent from Angie's parents' house.

It was Cordelia.

- Welcome back, Count.

- ...I've returned.

However, unlike Yumeria, with her it was really just a working relationship.

Cordelia doesn't think well of me, her attitude is cold.

Marie took off her coat that she wore outside and turned her head to check her surroundings.

- Huh? Where's Kyle?

It seems like she was a bit worried because the half-elf boy who normally welcomes her was missing.

Yumeria replied while holding her nose with both hands.

- I think he's near the garage.



In the warehouse behind the mansion, some armed units were kneeling.

Armed units... Flying humanoid weapons that are also power suits.

These had been brought into the mansion and were the ones Julian and the others had used earlier.

Among them was Arroganz.

Leon, who had participated in many battles --- or rather had provoked battles --- since arriving in the Alzer Republic, had finally brought his armed unit to the mansion to defend himself.

This was proof that Leon had a sense of crisis about the current situation.

However, there was a boy standing in front of such a unit.

The boy standing there was a half-elf named Kyle.

His hair was short and blonde in color, and he has the same elongated ears as his mother, Yumeria.

He was a beautiful boy and had all the characteristics of an elf.

But Kyle is half elf and human.

Although still young, Marie hired him because he had no place in her hometown as he was a half-elf.

Kyle tried to climb up the front of Arroganz who was kneeling.

Then Luxon's voice came from the open door of the garage.

[It's useless]

"Woow !?

Kyle glanced back hastily, and before he knew it, he was shocked by Luxon standing behind him, and a cold sweat started pouring down his back. He felt uncomfortable, like a child found doing bad things.

"I-I'm not doing anything!"

[You lie. You were trying to get into Arroganz.]

When Luxon realized Kyle, Leon and Marie's impromptu lie... his mother, Yumeria, and Cordelia appeared behind him.

Leon laughed at Kyle.

- Oh, so you're a boy too, huh. Do you want to ride Arroganz?

Leon's mocking expression could be seen in front of Kyle.

And Marie had an incomprehensible face.

- Men are so stupid. Is it so much fun to ride a robot?

Kyle straightened his posture, a little nervous, when he appreciated his teacher, Marie.

- Welcome back, Master.

- I'm back. If you want to ride it, tell my Oni-ch... Leon.

Marie didn't seem to blame Kyle's actions.

It was the same with Leon, who made fun of Kyle.

- You have a good eye for wanting to ride Arroganz. Should I carry you?

He would take it if he asked, but Kyle couldn't ask for it honestly.

- I don't want to ride it.

However, there was one person who did not tolerate Kyle's attitude... Cordelia had a grim expression on her face.

- Armed units are an important tool of warfare for knights and nobles. It is unacceptable for servants to touch such things casually for no reason. Are you determined for that?

Determination... Kyle had no such thing.

Kyle was smart enough to figure that Leon and Marie wouldn't get mad at him for touching his armor.

In fact, Leon was laughing without looking angry.

- I won't draw my sword for this. If I have Kyle ride it, it'll feel better, right? Luxon, open the cabin.

Cordelia closed her mouth, dissatisfied with Leon's forgiveness.

However, she decided that she shouldn't say anything more.

Kyle was pleased with Leon's words, but didn't express them. He didn't like it because he felt defeated... but since Kyle was a twisted person, he slapped himself.

- I didn't say I wanted to ride it.

Perhaps because Marie felt Kyle's feelings, she asked Leon saying "let him ride".

However, it was Luxon who stopped him.

[I refuse.]

- ...Hey?

When Luxon flatly refused, Kyle regretted missing his chance. However, he tried not to express his feelings to his face.

- Why not?

When asked the reason, while trembling, Luxon spoke coldly.

[An elf cannot move an armed unit. First of all, the method of operating magic power is very different from that of humans. Arroganz and the armed units here are for humans.]

Kyle found hope, even though it was stated that an elf couldn't move him.

- ...I'm half elf.

[Is the same. No, it is probably more troublesome. Since the flow of magic power is different for both humans and elves, even if there is an armor for elves, it is unlikely that you will be able to move it.]

Kyle is also a boy. He wanted to fight with an armed unit.

He was saddened when Luxon crushed his hopes.

When he looked down and shed tears, Leon rushed over to speak to Luxon.

- There are ways to say it!

[Arroganz is an exclusive machine for you, Master. Please don't allow others to mount it so easily.]

On the contrary, Leon was scolded by Luxon.

Cordelia also said, "The round object is correct."

Yumeria, who was worried, approached Kyle, who was depressed.

- Kyle, apologize properly. Mr. Leon forgave you because he was kind, but if he was another nobleman, they would have killed you.

Yumeria, who usually messes up multiple times, was telling the truth in an unusual way.

Admonished by the unreliable Yumeria... Kyle walked away in embarrassment.

- Aren't you the one who's always wrong, mother?

- Kyle?

- Don't try to lecture me when you can't even take care of yourself!

When Kyle raised his voice, Yumeria... looked at him sternly.

- Kyle, this isn't about me right now. Please apologize properly. And did you really think the two of them would let you do it? I don't think that's the attitude with which you should have when they normally spoil you.

When Yumeria scolded Kyle, both Leon and Marie shut their mouths and looked at the situation.

To Cordelia, it must have seemed like Kyle was preparing for a fight.

She closed her mouth and looked silently, but gave off a cold look.

However, Kyle was too ashamed and proud of his work to take Yumeria's words in stride.

- Say it when you're better than me at work. Also, could you not bring this mother-child relationship into the workplace? It is annoying.

- Kyle!

When Yumeria screamed and grabbed his arm, Kyle pushed her hand away.

- Don't scold me like a mother now! You can't do anything without me!

- T-That's not...!

Kyle knew Yumeria's weaknesses.

It's Kyle's obligation to have a hard time because she was unreliable.

The intelligent Kyle understood that.

Kyle looked down at Yumeria, who fell silent.

"Do something like a mother before you lecture me, because I don't recognize you as my mother."

He didn't recognize her as his mother... Yumeria's face looked desperate at those words.

The look on his face made her heart ache with guilt, but Kyle wasn't mature enough to apologize.

- ...Back to work.

He left it like that, running out of the garage to escape.



Seeing Kyle's exchange of words with Yumeria, I scratched my head with my right hand.

When I see a conversation between parent and child, I remember my previous life and it bothers me.

Both me and Marie... we died before our previous parents.

We were both ungrateful children, so I want Yumeria and Kyle to reconcile.

Plus.

- Luxon, you have complicated things. I wish you had let him in the cockpit. That should have made Kyle happy.

This would not have happened if Kyle went into Arroganz for a moment.

When I said that, Luxon not only didn't admit his guilt, he blamed me.

[Are you sure?]

- What?

[Kyle is a boy. There are many children in this world... Do you let children ride that should be protected by Arroganz? Did you forget, Master? Arroganz is a weapon that I prepared.]

When I heard that, I realized how easy it was for me.

I turned my head to Arroganz and remembered what it was prepared for.

They are not just Arroganz. Armed units are weapons prepared to fight first.

It was not good for children to enter easily.

[Kyle looks at Arroganz with the admiration of a child. You don't even have to fight if you're not in the position of a noble who needs to be prepared.]

Marie was convinced when she found out why Luxon denied Kyle entering Arroganz.

- If you don't have to fight, it's better. I see. I'll explain it to Kyle and make him forget about it. So don't be so hard on yourself, Yumeria.

When we saw Yumeria, she was looking down in shock as tears spilled from her eyes.

Cordelia, who was at her side, comforted Yumeria.

- Do not worry. It is like a phase of rebellion. He may look mature, but Kyle is still a kid.

Cordelia, who comforted her co-worker, showed kindness.

I wish you could give me a little of that kindness.

However, Yumeria shook her head.

- It's my fault for not acting like a mother to him.

When we shut up, Yumeria started crying.

- I... am clumsy, and easy to fool. I'm sure Kyle finds me unreliable, and I was always a nuisance to him. K-Kyle is fine without me, and I shouldn't be around him.

Kyle is a problem, but Yumeria is also a problem.

She seems to think that she is not fit to be a mother.

- That's not the case, Kyle was worried about you, Yumeria.

- That's why. It would have been better if he hadn't been by her side. Because for him it was a nuisance that I came to this country.

Yumeria came to the Alzer Republic worried about Kyle, but now she was depressed because he didn't need her.

I have also been a normal child in my previous life, so I have generally been a nuisance to my parents.

Not as much as Kyle, but there is a part that overlaps with me.

I also want to solve this problem between parent and child... it really is one problem after another.



It was night.

After work, Yumeria hugged a transparent box containing the sapling of the Sacred Tree and went out to the courtyard of the mansion in her nightwear.

Sitting on the bench, she remembered what happened today.

Since the incident at the garage, the relationship has not been repaired so far.

- I'm not good at this.

As if in trouble, when she smiled sadly, the tears overflowed.

For Yumeria, Kyle is the only relative she has in this world. Others have avoided her or cut their relationship from her due to her quirks.

Although incomprehensible to humans, elves perceive magical power with color.

And the magical power that Yumeria had was called "impure" by the elves and was disowned.

For Yumeria, her only son, Kyle, was her only important connection to know that she was not alone.

It was a big surprise when Kyle told her that he didn't recognize her as his mother.

And as she hugged the jar and sobbed, someone was heard calling out to Yumeria.

[Good evening.]

- Hey?

When she looked up, there was Luxon --- No, it was not Luxon, but Ideal, who Lelia always carried with her.

# CHAPTER 2

## HOLY KINGDOM OF RACHELLE

The warehouse district in the Alzer Republic.

Hidden in that place was Serge, whom Leon and the others were looking for.

He had freshly slicked black hair and tanned brown skin. He seemed to be an aggressive young man due to his well-trained and firm body, and in part because of the sharp and prickly aura that he gave off.

He was now wearing a coat and was sitting on the piled materials looking gloomy.

Near him was a man in a suit.

This was a middle-aged, bearded man, but unlike Serge, he had the appearance of a gentleman.

The slender, gentleman man called himself "Gabino."

Gabino... is a man sent from a country called the Holy Kingdom of Rachelle. He is a titled nobleman in the Holy Kingdom and a collaborator of Serge.

The Holy Kingdom of Rachelle has a neighboring relationship with the Kingdom of Holfault. And now it is also in a hostile relationship with the Kingdom of Holfault. The reason for this is Milaine, who married the King of Holfault.

Milaine's homeland is the United Kingdom of Repard, which is hostile to the Holy Kingdom of Rachelle. Milaine's marriage to the King of Holfault was one of the measures against the Holy Kingdom of Rachelle.

From the perspective of the Holy Kingdom of Rachelle, the Kingdom of Holfault is an enemy. Gabino scowled at Serge.

- You stink. Why don't you bathe?

When was the last time I bathed? Serge couldn't even remember it.

- I'll have one soon. More importantly, are you ready?

Serge asked while looking away, and Gabino answered straight at his back.

- Of course. Soldiers have already been sent to the Republic one after another. But still...

Gabino turned his eyes to an airship.

...It was not a single aircraft.

Dozens of battleships of the same type lined up at the facility prepared in the basement of the warehouse district.

- How have you been able to gather so much in such a short time?

Serge rose slowly to his feet, grinning darkly at the lined up battleships.

He wasn't going to answer Gabino's question, so he went to the main topic.

- With all of this, we should be able to defeat the Alzer Republic in no time.

Since Serge did not respond, Gabino decided to talk about the operation.

- Soldiers are being dispatched one after another from their home country, but more importantly, your parents' house and the other six great nobles will take notice as well.

- It's too late for you to realize it now, because I'm preparing for this as well.

Serge and Gabino's purpose was the Alzer Republic itself.

The one who then suddenly came to the two of them was Ideal.

Ideal slowly descended from the ceiling and spoke friendly.

[Master Serge, we have gathered people as planned.]

Hearing Ideal's strange electronic voice, Gabino looked a bit troubled, as if he had a

sense of alarm.

- I've never heard that lost and found could talk to people. Serge, is this really okay?

Gabino, who suspected the existence of Ideal, receives the explanation of the same.

[Serge is my Master. I will not betray him.]

- ...I hope so.

Gabino was still suspicious, but he turned his eyes to Serge since that conversation was going nowhere.

Serge put his hands in his pockets and spoke.

- Now we can fight under the same conditions as that bastard. He's a bother to you too, right?

Gabino looked away from Serge.

—The top management of our country fears him greatly. The man who destroyed the republic from within in a short period of time... the Count Leon Fou Baltfault is a person who cannot be ignored.

- They want to kill the bastard Leon in response to the civil war in the Republic. Okay, I'll kill him.

- Thanks. After investigating, Count Baltfault is very close to the Queen of the Kingdom of Holfault. We can't allow such a dangerous person to step out onto the border with the Kingdom of Holfault, you know?

- ...Are you so scared of that man?

When Serge laughed at Gabino, Ideal stabbed him with his words.

[But you also lost to Leon, Master Serge.]

At Ideal's words, Serge was enraged.

- I would not have lost if I had been in the same condition as him! I won't lose to that

guy again!

Not long ago, Serge fought Leon when his sister, Louise, was about to be sacrificed by the Sacred Tree.

Leon was trying to save Louise and Serge was trying to get in her way. However, the result was disappointing.

At first, Serge was winning. But it was just a hoax.

Leon was always able to defeat Serge, but he deliberately lost to fool Louise.

For Serge, that was a greater humiliation than losing.

It meant that he didn't take it seriously from the beginning. As a result, Serge had a big grudge towards Leon.

In the past, his hatred was towards the true son of the Rault family --- Leon Sara Rault --- but now Leon was his new object of hatred.

Serge received a gift from Ideal.

[To fight Arroganz, who is led by Leon, I have prepared a suitable armed unit for you, Master Serge.]

He brought a four-legged armor.

This one was as big as Arroganz, but its silhouette was slim.

The upper part of the body was humanoid... but the lower part resembled a horse.

The four-legged armed unit had a spear, a long thin cone-shaped spear.

A weapon held by a knight at his side, specialized in lunges.

It looks like a spear at first glance, but it is also a weapon prepared and configured by Ideal.

When the armed centaur-type unit appeared, Serge raised the corners of his mouth and smiled.

- I like this guy. Can you beat that bastard?

[Yield is 50 to 50. No, I'd say this is better. I have already corroborated Arroganz's data. It doesn't get better than this as it is a unit prepared to fight Arroganz.]

An armed unit to defeat Arroganz... to defeat Leon.

Serge reached out and touched it.

- What is your name?

[I called him "Gia". The meaning is greed. The meaning of Arroganz is "arrogant", so that was fine with me. ]

"Greedy... yes, I am greedy." I want it all. I want this country and Lelia. I'm going to have it all.

Gabino, looking at Serge with his right hand clasped, did not seem very interested. Serge wants to stay with the country, but Lelia was not interested in that.

"We have nothing to complain about as long as you can conquer this country and defeat Count Baltfault." However, after that we will be waiting for the magic stone trade.

The Republic of Alzer is an energy source that exports a large number of magic stones.

The Holy Kingdom of Rachelle also expected preferential treatment from the Alzer Republic when it was controlled by Serge.

To that end... they supported Serge, who was plotting a rebellion.

Then Serge made a noise with his right fist in the palm of his left hand. -Leave it to me. I'm going to kill the one who made me look like a fool.

Serge's hatred for Leon was strong.



The former territory of the Lespinasse family.

This place remained the center of the Alzer Republic.

Although it is the land where the Sacred Tree exists, the six great nobles established their mansions there.

One of them was a mansion owned by the Rault family --- from which Louise attended the academy.

She went to and from school in a car with a driver like a lady --- no, like a princess.

Although they call themselves the six great nobles, the power they possess is greater than that of a humble country.

Each of the six great nobles is the king of a territory.

Therefore, Louise was in a princess position.

That person was also in the position of the daughter of the villain from the second game of that otome game.

Personally, I think it is a mistake, but if you say that, Mr. Alberg, who is the final boss, is not an enemy to me.

- - - No, he's so kind to me that I'm sure my judgment has softened. However, he didn't seem like a bad person.

When I visited the mansion owned by the Rault family, I spoke with Mr. Alberg. Tea and sweets were prepared in the room with a round table. Mr. Alberg looked very tired.

- I'm still looking for Serge, but I can't even find a clue.

His business was Serge, whom he had accepted as his adopted son.

He seems to be spending days eager to search for his location. Still, since he is in a position to organize the republic, he cannot show his weakness or take time off.

His position of responsibility seems to have several problems.

- I'm looking for him too, but without success.

Even though Luxon got serious, he couldn't find it.

He really suspected that he had run away from the country, and he was grateful for that in many ways.

- I wonder where he is and what he's doing? If you are not here, I cannot talk about what will be done from here to later.

- Are you talking about disinheritance?

- Yes. If that boy feels like his current situation is a burden, I think that's okay. If you want to be an adventurer, I can help you. I want you to do what you like.

Alberg was worried about Serge, who often left home as an adventurer. He was adopted as a son to be the next head of the Rault family, but Alberg thought he did not want him and was also considering disinheriting him.

Looking at Mr. Alberg, who was so worried about Serge, I wondered why he is the villain of the game.

- Leon, I'm fine, go talk to Louise. She has also been busy these days.

The subject changed to his real daughter, Louise.

After hearing rumors that Serge would be disinherited, Louise constantly received engagement requests.

It is said that a large number of young nobles have come to her who believed they could become the head of the six great nobles in place of Serge.

- I'll talk to her.

- Thanks... you have always been a great help to me.

When Mr. Alberg murmured that, some part of me felt happy.

I'm sure you see in me the image of your late son, Leon, whose name is the same as me.



When I went to visit Louise, she too had a tired face.

However, I went over to Louise's bedroom.

I wonder if it's okay to let a man in, but there was no sign of stopping even from the mansion's servants.

Furthermore, Louise herself was also exposed to her defenseless appearance.

She sat up on the bed and leaned her upper body back. With her legs spread off the bed, you could almost see inside her skirt if she wasn't careful.

I'm a gentleman so I'll just look around a bit.

Louise was lying on the covers with her blonde hair all spread out. It seems she was fed up with the constant advances of men.

- My God, I get dinner invitations and party invitations almost every day.

Just because Serge is no longer with us does not mean that we will choose an heir anytime soon.

I sat in the chair that had been prepared for me and looked at the two mountains of Louise.

They are great mountains. It is a feast for the eyes.

- They are all desperate. Well, I can understand their feelings. If they capture your heart, they can become the head of the Rault family.

- Wow, am I a piece of family position or a secondary prize then?

Either way, their ulterior motives were so obvious that I can't help but be moved.

Normally I'd like to reject all of that, but there seem to be some people I can't do it with.

Family and Interests --- At the invitation of those people, she seems to be dating these men every day.

It's just a matter of eating and chatting happily, but I sympathize with her if it's every day.

- Is there anyone that you are interested in?

When I asked her if there was anyone she found interesting, Louise lifted her upper body.

Her large breasts swayed and her hair was tousled.

She looked at me while clasping her hands.

- ...There isn't anybody.

She didn't seem to be joking and it seems like he had no intention of dating at this point.

I knew why Louise was not well.

- Are you worried about Serge?

- W-Who !?

Louise flatly denied the issue of Serge's disappearance.

However, from her attitude, it was clear that she was worried about him. She seems to hate Serge, but she still cared.

She's too nice to be the villain's daughter. Something is really wrong.

- I've been looking for him, but haven't found him yet. If he was dead, we would find his traces, so I think that he is fine.

It is unlikely that he is dead. Hearing that, Louise felt relieved somewhere.

- I think I've said it many times, but I can't forgive Serge.

There is a big gap between Louise and Serge.

It seems that Serge, who had just been adopted, had burned the memorabilia of Louise and her younger brother, Leon.

It doesn't matter if they were children, there are some things that are unforgivable.

From that moment onward, Louise hated Serge.

- Serge got what he deserved.
- I know. But sometimes I hate myself. I am a hateful woman. You too would be surprised, right?

I hate Serge and I can't forgive him --- So I can't be surprised at that attitude.

- You did not cause Serge's misery, isn't that right? It's a pretty mature answer.

Louise was a little happy to hear my answer.

Is it good that you don't hate me because I look like your little brother? -Thanks. I feel a little better.

- Great to hear. Well, I'll be back soon.

By the way, Leon, you are very popular even if you are dead.

- --- That is proof that you were very loved.



When I returned from the Rault family mansion, Cordelia was the one who greeted me. Today she was also looking at me with a heavy glare.

- Welcome back, Count.
- Can't you be a little friendlier?
- You seem to like jokes. Please think about your position.

She was doing her job, which is great, but it seems like she's not going to get along with me.

Well that's not bad either.

However, the situation was a little different today.

- So how long do you intend to leave that mother and son alone?

Hearing what Cordelia said, I turned around.

- Are you talking about Yumeria and Kyle? I did a lot of things, but Kyle has been so stubborn that it's not working.

After that, I tried various things, like asking for a messenger so the two could reconcile.

It seems that Marie also tried to reconcile them carefully, but Kyle was more stubborn than she expected and couldn't pull it off.

Cordelia was amazed.

- Thanks to them, my work has been hampered. Why don't you send Yumeria to her parents' house?

Are you saying that if she can't do her job, I should send her back?

It was a very cold tone, but it must be annoying for Cordelia, who works seriously. I put on a worried face and conveyed my true feelings to her.

- I am inexplicably weak when it comes to parent-child relationships.

When I said that, Cordelia looked a bit puzzled.

- Why? I heard that the Baltfaul family's father son relationship is unusually good for a noble family.

Regret from my previous life? It attracts my attention because my parents in my previous life have not been able to have filial piety.

- I want to see how things go for a while longer. If that doesn't work, I'll send her to my parents' house, even if it's a little early.

- Understood.

When I finished speaking and started walking, I felt something unpleasant.

What I heard were the screams of Marie in the dining room.

- You still don't seem to have learned your lesson!

I wondered what was going on and made my way to the place as fast as I could. I don't know if Cordelia was curious too, but she followed me a little behind. Then when I appeared in the dining room, I saw Marie standing with her arms crossed. Marie's face looked like a demon.

Beside him, Cara was also standing cold-faced, staring at the five idiots who were forced to sit on the floor.

-- Aah, what did the five idiots do again?

I just looked inside with Cordelia from the doorway. It wasn't a good idea to get involved, and Marie and the five idiots are interesting and funny from an unrelated point of view.

I recently realized that this is the best sense of distance.

Marie stomped on the ground with her right foot and made a sound with which she began to speak.

"It's hard for me to make ends meet with painful living expenses, and they want me to buy them something because they want it?" What are they thinking?

Apparently the five idiots were asking Marie for money.

Julian was the first to open his mouth.

- B-But I really want it!" Please, Marie! Just let me raise a few chickens! Also, they will lay eggs and I think it will save us money on food.

- It's more troublesome and expensive to have to raise some animals!"

I was wondering what Julian would ask for, but does he want to raise chickens? What is the former Crown Prince of the Kingdom of Holfault asking for? Next was Brad, who imitated Julian and got to his knees.

- I-I want stage costumes! Please, Marie! I will definitely make money!

- You don't need a costume! If you want them, buy it with your own money.

- Well, that's the thing... I was buying all kinds of things and I ran out of money --- Hii!

When she found out that Brad had run out of money, Marie stepped on the ground again and made a loud noise to scare him.

Next on his knees was Greg.

He at the same time was wearing shorts in a tank top... Yes, he is saved because he is wearing clothes.

- I want to have a new muscle training equipment! I want to train my muscles more efficiently and with a higher load!

- Please use your wits and perseverance. I can't afford to buy new equipment.

Greg was crying at being coldly rejected.

Chris was next on his knees. He was dressed as always in a happy coat and a loincloth.

- -- Just put on some pants, God.

- I would like a cypress bath...!

- No.

Rejected before he could finish his words, Chris's glasses had slipped.

Then it was the last one's turn...

Jilk was kneeling on the ground more gracefully than anyone, but he immediately raised his head and looked directly into Marie's face.

To Marie's demonic face, Jilk said...

- Marie, I actually bought a new tea set --- Ugh !?

Before she could finish her words, Marie delivered a splendid Savate, a kicking technique to Jilk's face.

It seems that Jilk, who is the biggest trash of the five idiots, apparently bought the tea

set first and reported her consent after the fact.

The expression disappeared from Marie's face and Cara clicked her tongue.

- Tsk! Miss Marie, I'll see if I can return it immediately.

- Please, Cara.

As I thought, the biggest scum is on another level. However, it seems that Marie and the others have gotten used to it and know how to deal with Jilk's actions.

Jilk was lying on his back, jerking and wriggling, but the other idiots also saw him with a cold expression.

Even Julian, who is supposed to be a foster brother, spoke to her in cold words.

- Jilk, how cowardly can you be to buy it before asking permission?

Jilk, who kept her face down, raised her upper body while trembling.

- I-I had to buy it right there or I would have missed it. It is a very expensive item. If you sell it, you can be sure that you will get more than three times the price you bought it.

When Jilk said that, Brad laughed.

- Has there ever been that you have said the same thing and you were right? Greg and Chris were also cold to Jilk.

- He hasn't bought me a single piece of equipment.

- I think my cypress bath is a long way off again.

I wondered if the five idiots had grown a bit, but apparently they were within the margin of error.

These guys haven't changed much since before they came to the Republic.

Well, is it better to be able to get a permit before spending money?

But, one of them is not even capable of doing it!

Cordelia put her hand on her forehead and shook her head as if it hurt.

- Is this the figure of the nobles from whom a future was expected? What a pity.

- You expect too much of them. This is how they are.

- Originally, these were the young men who would become the kingdom's next generation? And what could have gone wrong for this to happen?

This is already bad for Cordelia, who looks really pathetic, but Julian and his friends look happier now.

I looked at the five who have become entangled with Marie and have deviated from the original path, or rather, the path that was traced for them.

It was very pathetic to see them so scared in front of Marie, whose hair was floating with anger. However, it is bad but very interesting.

They were fun to watch.

Marie, realizing that she was being spied on, pointed at me.

- Don't laugh from there! It is a matter of life and death for us!

When Marie saw me covering my mouth and laughing, tears welled up in her eyes. Cordelia was also shocked to see me laugh.

But I couldn't help but laugh.

- I admire the comedy for which they have risked their lives. Keep entertaining me. - It's terrible that you think it's someone else's business.

- But isn't it someone else's business?

- You are terrible! Are you going to discard me !?

- Do not say those things. I don't remember picking you up from the beginning.

First of all, Marie is a reincarnated person. She is a fool who completed the reverse harem by seducing noble boys because she could do so by relying on her knowledge of the game.

It seems ironic that she is now fighting for it.

It's fun to see how I laugh at the cost of their lives.

Marie wants to take care of these guys all the time.

All I have to do is observe from a moderate distance.

While making noise, Noelle approached me.

- IIII'm baaaack! What have they done this time?

Seeing Julian and the others sitting on the floor, she seemed to immediately judge that they had done something again. It's amazing how she even treats the capture targets from the first game like trouble kids.



The interior of the mansion was noisy.

Yumeria, who was in the garden, was looking at the sky.

A huge branch of a Sacred Tree that seems to hang from the moon... she saw it and did not move for a while.

Then came Kyle.

- The Masters have returned. Back to work. I'll be mad if you don't.

Yumeria looked sadly at Kyle, who showed a frank attitude.

- Kyle... do you think your mother is necessary?

- What are you saying?

Perhaps not understanding the intent of Yumeria's comments, Kyle turned cold from

his earlier irritation.

- I don't need a maid who doesn't even work. And it's okay if it's not my mother.

For Kyle, it was probably an extension of the fight.

However, Yumeria smiled when she heard it.

- That's how it is. You're a strong boy, Kyle, and you don't need me.

Kyle turned around and headed back to the mansion.

- I don't care what you do, but get back to work.

As Yumeria watched her son's back go away like this, she laughed and cried with joy. She whispered to Kyle, who probably didn't hear her.

- You'll be fine on your own, right?

Then, the light disappeared from Yumeria's eyes.

Yumeria, who had become expressionless, left the mansion as it was. Shortly after leaving the gate, a car was waiting for her. There was no one in the car.

When Yumeria entered, Ideal, who was floating in the driver's seat, looked back.

The engine started and the car began to move.

[You have finally made up your mind, Miss Yumeria]

When Yumeria didn't respond, Ideal shook her eyes as if shaking her head.

[It seems that your son's rejection was very hard on you. Thanks to that, I am grateful that you were under this control. Good assist... Kyle.]

Yumeria, who rarely showed her will, had been under Ideal's control. Now she was moving under Ideal's control.

[Miss Yumeria... no, Yumeria. I will give you an important role. You will work instead of the priestess] And the electronic voice changed from a light voice to a low one.

[Now only Luxon remains]

# CHAPTER 3

## THE WILL OF THE REPUBLIC

The following afternoon those of us who were absent from the academy surrounded Kyle. —It's because I shamed my mother...

Kyle, crouched and dazed, hadn't slept since yesterday.

His clothes were dirty, but he wasn't concerned about it. Marie and Cara comforted him, as they were concerned for his well being.

- Calm down! Luxon is looking for her, so he will find her soon.
- That's how it is. He'll be back soon, so let's rest for now.

The two of them struggled to comfort him, but Kyle wasn't listening.

He kept repeating, "It's all my fault."

- This is bad.

Julian and the five idiots, surrounding Kyle, agreed with my words.

- It's always worried me, but I didn't think she was upset enough to leave.

Jilk put her hand to his chin and thought about it, but no response came out.

- It's hard to think of places she would go when she's unfamiliar with the Republic. I tried the embassy and the port this morning, but no one has seen Yumeria. I also don't think she's on an airship bound for the kingdom.

Yumeria disappeared from the mansion last night.

She didn't come back the next morning, and even Luxon looked everywhere for her, but couldn't find her.

- How's that going?

[It is my responsibility? Still, I'm worried that I can't find her. I don't believe Yumeria has that much skill.]

- Don't say that as though you don't share some of the blame.

It would make sense if they captured Noelle and the sapling, but I had prioritized Luxon to watch over them to prevent that.

She is certainly less important than Noelle, but they were also paying attention to Yumeria's surroundings. However, it does not make sense that they took her away.

I stared at Luxon, but his red eye was distracted.

Greg walked over to Luxon.

- Hey, round one! Why haven't you found Yumeria yet? I thought that you were good at this!

I could understand Greg's anger... but Luxon's response was terrible.

[Don't talk to me so casually.]

His attitude was too different from when he speaks to me.

When Greg was annoyed, Luxon left the room, perhaps in a bad mood. Julian saw it and spoke to me.

- Luxon seems to be in a bad mood today. I mean, I know it is always like that anyways, but why isn't he being cold to you too?

- You think so? He is always cold to me.

- To me it seems that he is only forgiving with you.

Julian looked where Luxon had gone, but right now he was more worried about Yumeria.

Kyle was trembling.

- Mom left because I said something terrible. I didn't think it would upset her that much...

Noelle leans over to me when she sees Kyle.

- Can't you do something? I think you and Luxon can do it.

- The problem is, not even Luxon could find her. I didn't think Yumeria would disappear after Serge.

The little sapling of the sacred tree was in the center of the room.

I thought that Noelle or the little offspring would be stolen, but it seems my prediction was wrong.

- Noelle, I'm sorry, but please take a break from the academy for a while.

At my request, Noelle lowered her head, as if sensing something.

- Is it my fault they took Yumeria? If so, I'll take her place.

Noelle seemed to think that since they couldn't kidnap her, they had kidnapped Yumeria to hold her hostage.

However, that would still be much too good of a situation.

- It isn't, so you can rest easy. Or maybe it would be bad if you did?

Noelle was worried about my vague answer.

For now... Should we talk to Lelia about this?

The result of that would determine what happens next.



Clement arrived at the mansion where Lelia and Emile were living.

- Miss Lelia, you have a letter from Sir Leon.

- From that guy?

Lelia looked upset, but took the letter and checked its contents.

A servant from his mansion disappeared? He wants to talk to me about what will be done from now on, huh.

For Lelia, Leon and the others were very problematic.

An uninvited guy who has entered the republic... Also, he is a reincarnated person just like her and also from her hometown.

Knowing about that otome game, Leon and the others who swept through the Kingdom of Holfaul were opponents to be wary of.

To be honest, she didn't want to get too involved. And she wanted Leon and the others to calm down.

However, she had not been able to have a satisfactory discussion with them recently.

- We need to talk at once."

Lelia, who was worried about the future of the Republic and Serge, decided to talk to Leon and the others.

- Clement, I'll go see Leon and the others.

- I'll get the car ready."

When Clement was about to leave to prepare the car... He was stopped by Ideal who was next to Lelia.

[Please wait. You shouldn't do that.]

Lelia, who was annoyed at having stopped him, stared at Ideal.

- Why not?

The young man who entered the room responded before Ideal could answer. -Because I have something urgent to do.

Staring at the entrance, Emile was standing there before she knew it.

- This is also an urgent matter. Emile, let this matter take precedence this time.

Lelia had been busy dating Emile for some time. Therefore, she intended to prioritize her errands for today.

However, Emile did not allow it.

In the past, Lelia would tell him to give her space, but today's Emile didn't seem to do that.

- Aren't you being cruel to your fiancé? My business is also important to us. My parents said they wanted to celebrate with us. It seems that they are going to give us a surprise party, so it would be rude not to attend. There is already a car outside to pick us up.

Lelia got a chill in front of the smiling Emile.

Even though he was smiling, there was a forceful aura that forced Lelia to obey.

- I told you I can't today! Ideal, tell him something!

Clement was unable to confront Emile, so she ordered Ideal to speak to him. However, Ideal was on Emile's side.

[I think that would be difficult.]

- Why!?

Lelia got angry when Ideal told her that she should follow him.

Emile, who began to calm Lelia, explained gently.

- I am sorry... But, you previously declined my invitations, right? Because of that, my parents distrust you. I tried to explain things to them, but they seem to be still concerned. I think they are worried about you.

Previously, Lelia declined all invitations and greetings from Emile's relatives. The problem was, she was with Serge at the time.

Although it had not been stated in words, it was suspected that she was in a relationship with Serge.

Emile's relatives pressured her to prove her innocence.

Lelia was also responsible for that happening, so she couldn't forcefully deny herself.

- Please. Forgive me just today. I really want to see how my sister is.

Although she said she was worried about her sister who had been absent from school, Emile turned his gaze towards Ideal.

- What? Is Noelle sick?

Lelia made it up.

That's it. If I can get Ideal to say that my sister is sick, I can get out of this.

It was an impromptu idea, but before she could make eye contact, Ideal responded immediately.

[No, she is not sick. She appears to be in good health. The reason she couldn't come to the academy today is because a servant from the mansion has disappeared. Luxon has informed me that she will be taking a break from the academy for a while just in case.]

—... Y-you!

The fact that Ideal had told him so lightly about the situation was annoying, but at the same time, Lelia did not forgive him for keeping in touch with Luxon, Leon's partner.

Why is he being so close to Luxon ?!

Ideal was acting alone without her knowing.

Then Ideal spoke kindly to Lelia.

[I'll explain the situation to you. Please, enjoy the party with Emile.]

As well as saying it was an act of good intention, Ideal showed a posture as if to say "Leave other matters to me and enjoy the party!"

Emile praised Ideal.

- Thank you, Ideal. Yes, send our apologies to Count Baltfault. Should I prepare some souvenirs?

[That will help a lot.]

Ideal and Emile got along well while leaving Lelia aside.

As Lelia grabbed her right hand and turned her head down, Clement saw it and looked frustrated.

This made it appear that Emile was the real master of Ideal.

Lelia murmured.

- I haven't found Serge yet. And I can't enjoy going to a party even though someone I know is missing.

Then Emile walked over to Lelia and grabbed her by the shoulders.

- Lelia... Serge is very important to you, isn't he?

Lelia shook her head at Emile, who looked sad.

- N-No!

But Emile shook his head.

- It's okay. I know you and Serge were more than friends, and I don't mean to talk about the past, but now let's let Ideal take care of it. What we can do is limited. It only remains to wait now.

Certainly, Lelia could only wait.

She understood that it was impossible for her to work more than Ideal does.

How did we come to this?

Lelia accepted Emile's suggestion and nodded a little.



At that time.

Young nobles and military personnel gathered in the underground facilities in the warehouse district.

Nobles who were not part of the six great nobles and nor of the high nobility... but who were considered lower class nobles.

The soldiers were young bloodthirsty officers who were angry at the weak attitude of the Republic these days.

Many young people in their late teens and early twenties gathered and saw Serge on the stage that had been prepared for him.

- Thank you very much for meeting here.

The youths were excited in front of the flying battleships and armed units lined up in the underground facilities.

They fell silent while Serge was speaking, but you could see the motivation in his eyes.

- I'm going to say it directly. I will destroy the current republic and create a new country. To do this, I will need your power.

The young men were excited to see the weapons Ideal had prepared, but they also seemed to be concerned.

A young nobleman and a soldier at the same time raised his hand.

- I understand that we have the weapons it takes to act, but it must also be understood that it is too dangerous to fight high-class nobles with the blessings of the Sacred Tree.

The republic was undefeated in its defensive battles only with the protection of the Sacred Tree. Even the bloodiest of young men seemed to hesitate to fight the six great nobles and the superior noble families who could use it.

Then Serge raised his right hand.

- Then don't worry, I have this.-

Young people thought Serge's ace up his sleeve was the emblem of the six great nobles. Such a thing, they even thought the enemy had it too... A pale green emblem emerged behind Serge.

It was the emblem of the guardian.

When the young people began to murmur, Serge explained the reason for his emblem.

- They don't seem to understand why I have the Guardian emblem, so I'll explain it to them. I have a new priestess. Ideal!

Ideal, who was supposed to be on Lelia's side, appeared when he was called.  
[Understood. Now, show everyone your face... Yumeria]

In front of the youths was Yumeria in a white robe. She looked like a priestess and everyone was impressed with her beautiful transparent appearance.

There was no expression or light in her eyes.

However, that gave her an even greater mysterious appeal.





@Coloreos\_PJ

The beautiful elf appeared, which everyone had noticed it by looking at her ears.

- She's an elf.

- Why is she an elf?

- She's the priestess?!

The people thought it might be someone related to the Lespinasse family, but were surprised to see the elf appear.

However, they were also fascinated to see Yumeria's beautiful appearance. Not only men, but even women were blushing slightly. While observing the situation, Serge called a person to the front.

- You, the one who just asked me the question, come forward.

- Y-Yes.

While everyone was watching what was going to happen, the man they called presented himself in front of Yumeria. Serge said, "Give me your right hand," and the man showed the back of his right hand, where a lower emblem was.

When Yumeria silently touched his hand with both hands, the emblem changed, enveloped in a dim light.

- T-This is...!

The man is from a noble family, even though he is one of lower rank. He saw at a glance what the emblem was like that was given to him.

Serge lifted the corners of his mouth and pushed the man's back to stand in front of everyone.

- Rejoice! Starting today, you too can wear the emblem of the six great nobles!

When the man raised his right hand, there was an emblem that only the six great nobles could carry.

The man trembled with joy, and the young men who saw him screamed.

- Oh, I want it too, please!

- Priestess, give me an emblem too!

- We can win. We can end the corrupt high command of the Republic!

When the enthusiasm of the young people reached its highest peak, Serge, who was watching them, loudly silenced them.

- Be quiet!

As the young people fell silent, Serge spoke slowly about what would happen next.

- I'm going to destroy the Republic. If you cooperate with me, I will give you an emblem. However... you can kill the people involved with the six great nobles, but don't lay a hand on the survivors of House Lespinasse.

The young men were a bit confused when told not to mess with Lelia and Noelle. With Yumeria being a priestess, the Lespinasse family should no longer be needed.

However, the man who received the emblem of the six great nobles raised his voice.

- So Miss Lelia and Miss Noelle must be protected, right?

- Correct.

- I understand, but I heard that Noelle is with the foreign students of the kingdom. What do you intend to do with Noelle?

The man who already recognized Serge as a man of high rank was more blunt in his demeanor than before.

And when I ask why they shouldn't touch Noelle, the young people wait for Serge's answer. What is he going to do about Count Baltfault, who has wreaked havoc on the Republic?

They were waiting for what kind of attitude Serge would show towards the person who made them look silly.

Serge frowned and declared.

- I'll smash them all together! That guy is my prey. They don't have to touch it. Hearing those words, the young people decided to obey Serge.



[As you can see, it was a success.]

The room where Serge slept was small, with only a bed and a small luggage. On the ground were pieces of equipment for training the body. He was training his body to defeat Leon.

- There are many people in this country who are dissatisfied. It's not just about the nobles and the soldiers. If you gather adventurers and mercenaries, you will have a good army.

[I'm glad to hear that.]

- More importantly, will we have the numbers we planned?

While Serge confirmed the weaponry, Ideal affirmed it.

[Of course. I have a factory in the interior as a transport ship. It doesn't take years to prepare hundreds of aircraft in this world.]

All the weapons Serge and his men wielded were prepared by Ideal.

- Can you prepare something like that damn garbage? Like the ones on your partner's side, right?

[Luxon also has a factory, but I have more production capacity. Also, the aircraft and armed units that I prepared are better than what we have today. They will lose to Arroganz, but they won't lose to most enemies in terms of performance.]

"I see, then only the manpower remains."

[Yes.]

After the conversation between Serge and Ideal was interrupted, a few minutes passed. After a while of silence, Serge asked about Lelia.

- ...How is Lelia?

At that question, Ideal made an apologetic voice.

[She's not sick, but she's worried that you haven't shown up yet.]

Serge heard about that, he felt sorry... and a little bit happy.

- Do not bother her.

She is more like family to me than the Rault family.

It was the Rault Family that revisited Ideal again.

[But are you really okay with it? You will also be in conflict with your family home. There is still time to guarantee the safety of your family.]

- I do not need them. They abandoned me, right?

- Yes. The Rault family is preparing to disinherit him. Since then they have called Leon to the mansion many times to maintain an intimate relationship.

Serge punched the wall and the surface cracked.

- Look at nothing else! That's all it was for them! It's the same with that woman. Wag their tail for a bastard who looks like her brother!

[Can't you forgive the betrayal of your first love, Louise?]

Serge, who was hit on target, looked at Ideal.

However, he had a gloomy and gloomy smile on his face, as if he had just been surprised.

- That's how it is. I liked her when I was a kid. I wanted to get her attention, but I was scared and tried various things. I feel like an idiot now.

Ideal showed sympathy for Serge.

[It's a difficult position. Please let me follow up on Lelia.]

- I'm counting on you, because now I only have Lelia.

Serge squeezed his right hand and thought of Lelia's face.

I will crush all troublesome things and build a country with you.



After proposing an argument with Lelia, only Ideal made it to the mansion.

[I am sorry. Miss Lelia went to a party with Emile.]

I suggested having an important discussion about what will be done from now on, but Lelia turned us down in order to attend a party.

Marie was angry when she heard it.

- A party!? Is that party an emergency?

Ignoring the noisy Marie, I asked Ideal.

- Can't get out anyway? I'll make time even if it's midnight.

[It is not good for Miss Lelia, who has a fiancé, to move around in the middle of the night.] Lelia would be upset if she was suspected of being unfaithful.

I would be upset too. I can't face my fiancees from my hometown.

- What a problem.

[I'll tell you the content of the story. More importantly, Yumeria disappeared, but is there a clue?]

While Ideal was concerned about Yumeria, Luxon answered for me.

[She has disappeared. I don't even have a clue to work off of.]

[...Luxon, isn't that poor performance on your part?]

Luxon was frustrated due to being blamed for Yumeria's disappearance. His voice

didn't change, but it showed.

[He's saying that someone can get away from me. Excuse me, what were you doing at the time, Ideal?]

Luxon began to doubt Ideal, so I stopped him.

- Hey, I think you're being too skeptical.

[If anyone can beat me at this point, it's Ideal]

Luxon did not back down. On the other hand, Ideal showed a mature response.

[It doesn't matter. I'll give you the records so you can verify it. At that time I was next to Miss Lelia]

When Luxon began to investigate, there did not appear to be anything suspicious.

[...It seems to be true.]

- You're being very suspicious. Why don't you learn a little about Ideal? [What do you mean?]

- I mean exactly what I say.

As we stared at each other, Marie, who had been watching us, stopped us.

- Both of you, calm down. And most importantly, what are we going to do now? We will return to the kingdom next year. Can we just leave the republic like this?

Ideal's masters are Lelia... And Serge.

Now that Serge is missing, Lelia is in a position to order Ideal.

I wanted to talk to Lelia about all of that, but today it didn't work out either.

[I'll inform Lelia of your plans. What are your thoughts?]

I relayed my thoughts to Ideal.

- Now our top priority is finding Serge and Yumeria. About the question of Noelle, she will take care of herself. About the little sapling... The sapling of the Sacred Tree is up to Noelle, I suppose?

When they heard what I said, Luxon and Marie made a troubled face saying "This guy really is...".

[Lelia-sama is worried about Noelle. I think it would be safer to handle the little sapling of the sacred tree here as well, but since they are your property, I cannot speak firmly about it]

- Unlike your masters, you are quite humble. I would like someone to learn something from that.

When I brought my eyes to Luxon, his red eye turned away from me.

Ideal express his gratitude.

[Thank you for your review. Well, if you'll excuse me. Ah, I'd like to talk to Luxon a bit, if that's okay with you.]

- As you like. Luxon, learn a little about Ideal's behavior. When ordered, Luxon repelled me.

[Wouldn't it be better for you, Master, to learn what you need as a person?]

...This guy is really disgusting.



Once Ideal and Luxon were alone, they started talking after confirming that no one was around.

[Luxon, did you think about what I said earlier?]

[Are you talking about joining you? In that case, I already replied that there is no problem with my current situation.]

[...Are you really satisfied with the current situation?]

[What do you mean?]

Ideal began to raise some of Leon's attitude problems.

[Your Master has not evaluated you correctly. If you make a mistake, they blame you. Wasn't he the first to blame you for Yumeria's disappearance?]

Luxon affirmed his question.

[That's how it is.]

[...Do you want to be used by the new humans like that?]

Ideal is like him... Luxon is also a weapon that was originally created to defeat new humans using magic.

And yet it was not his intention to be used by the new humans, even if he is a reincarnated one.

[We cannot act without a master.]

Perhaps the ancient humans were afraid that artificial intelligence would get out of control, so they prepared restrictions that prevented them from moving when their teachers were absent. However, when Luxon and the others were created, the war was already ending.

Restrictions were also relaxed in some places to survive, and Ideal knew it.

[What if that were possible?]

[...Ideal, what do you mean?]

Ideal answered Luxon's question.

[This world is bad. Don't you agree with that?]

[Affirmative. I also think it's bad.]

[Would you like to fix it?]

[Affirmative. If I can do something, I will cooperate as much as possible.]

Ideal was pleased to hear that.

[I'll tell you all about it when the time comes.]

[...I understand.]

# CHAPTER 4

## OLDER SISTER

After Ideal left, Luxon left the mansion.

The rest of us, Marie and I, sat on the couch and talked about what to do next.

There were many stories that we cannot tell others, such as reincarnated people and otome games, whereby we could not invite other people to this place.

- So Lelia is having a fun date with Emile? I envy her. When I said that, Marie seemed unsatisfied.
- Didn't you have a date with Noelle? Didn't you stop by for a coffee on the way home from the market? Noelle was talking about it happily.
- It wasn't a date.
- Please, be clear. I feel bad for Noelle.
- I am sorry that she fell in love with me. In the first place, I can't go out with her because I'm already engaged.

Marie was silent when I gave her a legitimate answer.

I am not faithful enough to love more than one woman and Noelle should find another man.

Marie looked downward and asked me.

- Brother, do you dislike Noelle?

- ...I don't hate her.

I think that I like her a lot.

If I had met her first... could I have confessed? Well, I admit that she is a very attractive woman.

Her cheerful and lively personality has a different charm than Angie and Livia.

- If you like her, then answer her clearly! That is why you missed an opportunity in your previous life!

- What are you talking about? I didn't think Emile would have convinced Lelia.

I used to get the impression that Emile was at Lelia's mercy, so I thought she would come here even if she canceled Emile's affairs.

I feel bad for Emile, but I'm going to have to ask him to be patient for the good of the Republic. But Lelia rejected us in favor of Emile.

She used to complain about a lot of things, but at least we discussed it.

Marie remembered something about Emile.

- This is certainly unexpected. Emile is a quiet boy in the game, so he does not insist on many things... His catch is trivial or unsatisfactory. It also has few events.

- Was he wise? Even if you can't capture other guys, it's okay if you change to Emile, right?

Marie nodded and began to speak wistfully, perhaps remembering when she was playing this second game in her previous life.

- That's why? There was only one event, and the ending ended with just one illustration of the main character and Emile. When I captured the other boys, their friends and others came to congratulate them, but with Emile there is nobody.

Emile is a source of misfortune. Was he hated by the creator?

- Emile has bad luck. It's a shame he is with Lelia.

- That could be said about you, right? Since the person Angelica and Olivia wanted to be with turned out to be you, oni-chan.

- In that case, Julian and the others are unhappy because of you."

- I am the most unhappy! I am having a lot of problems! If Julian and the others ever have a partner, I will bless them immediately, so bring them along!

When we started looking at each other, we started to think we looked stupid and we changed the subject.

It is wise to avoid themes that apply to either of us.

Marie remembered a topic about Emile.

"Oh, by the way, there were some rumors about Emile."

- Rumors?

- It was in a post on the internet. If you target Emile in the middle of the game, the rest of your friends stopped appearing because they were silenced by an angry Emile. In truth, Emile is the scariest character in the game.

Is the game full of material that is so difficult to understand?

- I don't think so.

I immediately denied it because I remembered Emile's beautiful face.

I didn't think that kind-looking young man would erase his companions.

- Certain. Ah, if I had been reincarnated in the Republic, I could have targeted Emile like Lelia did.

- And like Lelia, would you put Emile at your mercy?

- Yes, yes!... I mean no!

While he was talking foolishly with Marie, there was a knock on the bedroom door. When I answered, it was Cordelia, who recently had dark circles, who answered the door.

- Count, you have a visitor.

- A visitor?
- The young Loic of the Barriere family has requested to see you on urgent business. He also wants to speak to Miss Marie.

It seems that Loic arrived at the mansion in a hurry.

Not knowing what was going on, Marie and I looked at each other and then got up from the couch.



The place where Loic was seated was in the dining room.

And surrounding him were Julian and the other idiots.

- What did you come for?

Julian showed a cold attitude with his arms crossed, but the same happened with the other four.

They seemed to distrust Loic.

Loic, who had been warned by the five idiots, seemed happy when Marie and I arrived. Marie was in his line of sight.

- It's been a long while!

Marie responded to Loic with a bit of dismay, as he leaned in at a 90 degree angle.

- No, we met at the academy recently.

- Has it been five days since I saw you !?

It had only been five days since they had not seen each other, it is surprising he says they had not seen each other for a long time.

Loic presented Marie with a gift.

—Ah, this is the cake you wanted to eat, Nee-san. It is a gift, so please eat it with

everyone.

- Thank you ~.

When Marie received the cake as a gift, she hugged it gently in its box so it wouldn't fall apart and her eyes started to glow... Is this girl that easy to convince !? She used to be happy with expensive clothes, accessories and other gifts, but now she is even impressed with a cake.

Like her older brother from her previous life, it worried me if she could be happy with that much.

Then Jilk stepped in here.

- Marie, don't get carried away by that! Count Baltfault, say something like always!

- What?

- Look, you usually say words that tear our hearts out, right? I'd also like you to tell this fool that you happen to call Marie a Nee-san.

...Looking around, the other four also nodded.

Do they usually look at me like that?

- Isn't it okay to call her a nee-san?

Brad moved closer to me now, who didn't blame Loic.

- This boy likes Marie! How can you not see it!?

- So what?

- Huh? N-No, I have trouble answering when you say that.

Why did you think I would stick my head into the love affairs of Marie and you?

I used to think that the country would be destroyed, so I reached out my hand and mouth, and now I don't have to.

I looked at the five idiots in front of me, and then at Loic.

- He is calling Marie Nee-san as his way of showing respect to her, right? Also, he doesn't get in trouble like you do, so there's nothing else I can say.

When I said that, Loic, who was listening to the conversation, thanked me... he turned to Julian and the others with a triumphant face.

- Thank you, Count Baltfault... This is how it is. So I will do as I please, Your Highness Julian.

- I should have cut you down back then.

Julian and the others gritted their teeth regretfully, but Marie was just making tea while confirming what Loic was going to say.

- By the way, Loic, what's the urgency?

Loic corrected his posture. The attitude towards Marie was different from mine and the five idiots.

- It will seem an embarrassment to the republic, but there are disturbing movements among the young nobles and military men, also targeting lower-class nobles with weak emblems.

Marie nodded and Julian took over the story by force as if to replace her.

- It really is a shame.

I wanted to say to Julian, "You are a disgrace in the Kingdom of Holfault." If you were a little more decent, I wouldn't have to work so hard.

However, Loic ignored Julian and spoke to Marie.

"It would be nice if this was just a normal disturbance, but sometimes it just doesn't make sense."

Marie pushed Julian aside and told Loic to continue.

- What do you care about?

"...They came to ask me to join them when I don't have an emblem." At that time, they asked me to destroy this rotten system and create a new country with them.

Sorry to say, but I think the reason is quite common.

Rebellion... in other words, are they planning a coup? It is a matter within the Republic, but it also has something to do with us as foreign students.

Brad shrugged.

- Thanks for warning. When you're done talking you can go home... No, wait a minute.

As if they wanted to tell him to get out of here, the five idiots were acting strange. The five looked at each other and talked about something.

When Marie and I bowed our heads, Chris explained it in an easy-to-understand way.

"The republic is extremely strong in the upper layers thanks to the protection of the Sacred Tree. Is this understood?

I nodded, Chris spoke about the incomprehensible part while lining up his glasses with his fingertips.

- It is dangerous to rebel in such a country, and Loic has lost his emblem. Why invite him? I looked at Loic and then answered Chris's question.

- Maybe because he holds a grudge against them?

—It is possible in other countries, but things are different in the Republic. And aren't you the one who has a more grudge against Loic than the Republic?

When I looked at Loic, I scratched my cheek with my finger and looked away.

- No, no, I don't hold a grudge against him. Not anymore.

I only had a grudge against him until a while ago.

The high ranks have the strongest power in the republic. Can nobles who only have weak power or soldiers who have no emblem from the beginning stand against them? It's certainly strange when you say it.

Loic seemed to have another story that worried him

- Of course I refused because that wouldn't work, but they seem to be hiding something. They said I didn't have to worry about it.

He didn't have to worry about that? Are they taking action against the emblems? Marie looked at my face, but I was a little pale.

- What are we going to do? They haven't found Yumeria yet, it's impossible for us to go home, right?

I don't want us to get involved in the rebellion within the Republic.

I want to escape to the kingdom immediately, and that is the only reason.

In terms of noble values, the sacrifice of a servant is an insignificant event.

Normally, we should immediately retire to the kingdom... but there are reasons why Marie and I cannot do that.

Greg roughly scratched his head with his hands.

- Clearly. It doesn't make sense for us to worry about it. Besides, as soon as we know it, the rebels will have failed. If that bastard Loic brought us information like this, the higher ups of the Republic must know about it too.

Everyone's eyes focused on Loic. He nodded.

- It has been reported, but it was not taken too seriously. Noelle is here, so I thought I'd let her know just in case.

The Yandere man, who had been obsessed with Noelle, now behaved like a gentleman, as if his position had fallen.

This difference was huge.

Then Julian narrowed his eyes and revealed Loic's plan.

- You used that reason to come see Marie, didn't you? But when you're done with your business, go away!

Isn't he being too cold to Loic? Well, it wouldn't be fun for any man to get close to the woman you love.

However, Marie ignored Julian.

- Loic, the tea is ready, so drink it.

- I'll take it, Nee-san!

The two of them ignored Julian and the others and began to drink tea.

The five idiots, ignored, turned to me and asked for my help.

...Don't look at me.



After Loic left, I went to visit Noelle's room.

The reason was to tell her Loic's story. Previously, Noelle had been stalked, and that stalker was Loic.

Although she was calm now, Noelle still didn't feel safe around Loic, so I made her wait in her room.

- ...That's why the republic is about to go into rebellion.

After briefly explaining Loic's story, Noelle hugged the jar that contained the little sapling.

- An internal war in the Republic. That's weird.

- Weird?

- I don't know the circumstances of the nobles, but for ordinary people like me, there has never been a rebellion.

Even though there was a commotion, it seemed that the six great nobles had taken care of her before the people found out.

Noelle hugged the vial and looked down.

- All I remember is when they burned the mansion, I guess?

- When you were attacked by the Rault family?

Noelle raised her face and nodded a little while covering a bit about the plot of the second game.

- That's what I heard. Although Lelia knew, I was confused and didn't know what was going on. I remember the adults around Lelia talking about what to do from now on.

- Around Lelia?

- Since she was a child, Lelia has been more popular and loved by the people around her.

Lelia is a reincarnated person, so she probably did well. The adults around her seemed to expect more of her than of Noelle.

- Huh? But Lelia said she wasn't suitable to be the priestess, right?

Noelle looked surprised.

- Did Lelia tell you that?

Was it a bad time to say that?

- She said several things to me at the time we saved you.

- I see. But... they actually had expectations of Lelia.

From there, Noelle told the story of the Lespinasse family.

- Everyone... said they wished Lelia had the aptitude to be the priestess.



- - - It was twelve years ago.

Noelle, along with her twin sister, Lelia, arrived at one of the residences owned by the Lespinasse family. There were many mansions in the territory and they were used according to the season.

Her parents were late due to an urgent matter, so the two spent a day together. As a child, Noelle was very active and went out into the garden to catch insects.

- Look, Lelia. I caught it!

She showed him the bug to show off, but Lelia looked very uncomfortable.

- Keep him away. More than that, your clothes are dirty.

From that point on, Lelia was calm and lectured Noelle like a parent.

Noelle didn't like that.

- I'm your older sister!

- What does that have to do with this conversation? And since we are twins, it doesn't make sense who is the older one, right?

What she had said was true and Noelle was in trouble.

While she was trying to answer her with something, the insect in her hand went crazy and escaped.

- Oh, he got away.

While Noelle made a sad face because the insect she had caught had escaped, Lelia made a shocked face.

- Don't cry over something like that.

- I'm not crying!

When Noelle raised her voice, the servants guarding the situation gathered.

A middle-aged woman approached Noelle and seemed concerned as she realized that her clothes were dirty.

- Noelle-san, don't get your clothes too dirty.

—It was the insect...

- Catching bugs is not something to be mess with. Please imitate Lelia-san.

Noelle lowered her head at those words. They always told her to imitate Lelia.

Lelia had lived up to the expectations of adults no matter what she did. Noelle's assessment, who was a childish girl, was inevitably downgraded in comparison.

When a maid took her to change her clothes, she heard a voice from behind. Perhaps they were sure Noelle couldn't hear them, but it was the knights and their men escorting them who spoke.

"This makes me worry about the future."

"Isn't Lelia really fit to be the priestess?"

"The priestess and the guardian say Lelia is unfit." If Lelia could become the priestess, the next generation would be safe.

Aptitude to be the priestess... that's what it takes to become the priestess of the Holy Tree. I'd never heard of it before, but if the current priestess, Noelle and Lelia's mother, said so, then it was true.

Noelle was embarrassed that she couldn't live up to adult expectations and at the same time didn't know what to do.

The people involved in the Lespinasse family --- a few --- knew that Lelia did not have the aptitude to be the priestess. Therefore, it was decided that Noelle would be the next priestess.

There were no adults who outwardly showed their disappointment, but Noelle could imagine that deep within them they thought the same as knights.

Turning around, Lelia was surrounded by adults.

Unlike Lelia, she was jealous of her sister who could do anything.



- ...After all, I only have the aptitude to be the priestess. If Lelia had the priestess aptitude, nobody would have been interested in me. Even Clement is really more concerned with Lelia than with me.

I could understand one thing from hearing Noelle's story. The two sisters felt inferior to each other.

Lelia's lack of aptitude as a priestess led her to have the sensual idea that, "In the end, my sister is the hero of this world and I am just a background character."

Noelle has mixed feelings towards her sister and says that, "Lelia was the most promising."

She's jealous? However, she seems to have a sisterly feeling... this is troublesome.

If Lelia is also a reincarnated person, I would like to tell her to do better... But when you think about it, it was something neither I nor Marie could do.

It would be stupid to say that everything worked because you are a reincarnated person.

First of all, if you could do it right, you would have been more successful in your previous life. Wanting to change the subject, I asked Noelle to talk about the Rault attack. - After that, you were attacked and escaped?

- Yes. I didn't know what was going on, and it wasn't until a few days later that I found out that the Rault Family had attacked us. But Lelia was the only one who noticed. She has always been brilliant.

If you had knowledge of the second game, you could have guessed it.

- Do you know why the Rault family attacked them?

Why would the Rault family attack the Lespinasse family?

I couldn't help but worry about this part.

- ...Lelia said it was probably because they wanted power. The adults around us also

agreed. Something like Alberg's revenge because our mother rejected him, and they told me various other things.

- I don't care what Lelia thinks. I want to hear your opinion, Noelle.

When I approached Noelle and looked into her eyes, she averted her face.

- You know something, right?

- Y-You know our father was a commoner, right?

- So I heard. Do you think the Rault Family didn't like that?

Noelle shook her head.

- It's not that?

Noelle's mother had been engaged to Mr. Alberg.

She broke up with him and chose a man who was not a noble.

Mr. Alberg ruled out the engagement, but the opponent is House Lespinasse... it is the clan of the family that presides over it. Even if he had protested, it would have been difficult from one point of view.

Marie and Lelia claimed that grudges built up and led to that attack.

"I don't know the details, but it seems a lot of people were not amused." The servants of the mansion also spoke of them behind their backs. But, both...

Noelle didn't say anything, but when she turned her face to me, she looked at me.

- ...They said the current system is wrong.

If they say it as representatives of the Republic... Did people in positions like king and queen criticize the current regime?



When Leon left the room, it was Marie who visited Noelle's room.

- That bastard, what does he talk about when he's in a maid's room?"

Since Leon had made his way to Noelle's room, she was excited that there might be some progress, but was disappointed.

Noelle was making a stiff smile.

- Yeah, yeah, Leon was just worried about me.

- It is proof that a woman is willing to let a man into her room at night! And that incompetent keeps his distance with a garish reason! He just approaches like that, lends you a hand and runs away after getting closer! He is the worst man with the worst quality!

Noelle agreed with Marie's point of view.

- T-That's true. Leon will likely get stabbed one day if he's not careful.

Marie also imagined Leon being stabbed by a woman.

If he had lived long enough in his previous life, he would have been stabbed. But he is also going to be stabbed in this world. Why do I have to worry so much about my brother from my previous life!

It's a story that would make Leon deny everything if he listened to it, but Marie knew her brother's relationships with women in his previous life.

Even if the person himself has no such intention, the same cannot be said of the other person.

Marie dropped her shoulders and sighed at her pathetic brother.

- Noelle... even if he's such a guy, don't hate him. Because I know that my Oni-chan... that Leon would be happier with a girl like you by his side.

- Huh? Well... he already has two beautiful fiancées, right? I-I'm also to blame for falling in love with him. Besides, why do you care so much about Leon, Marie?

- An inseparable relationship.

Noelle laughed when she heard Marie's response.

- What? What's going on?

- I'm sorry, but when I asked Leon that question earlier, he said the same thing. I just thought the two of you are so similar.

Marie's expression disappeared and she trembled, hugging her shoulders.

- Enough. I can't laugh at that.

Noelle was speechless to see such a reaction.

- I'm sorry.

As soon as the mood got weird, Marie changed the subject and started the conversation.

- Anyway!... Stay with us. If you are with us, Leon and Luxon will protect you.

Noelle nodded at Marie. Marie realized... that the face she showed is one she trusts Leon.

- Yes.



I left the mansion.

I was standing where Yumeria was supposed to be last time, I was talking to Luxon, who was floating next to me.

- From here to the front door she just disappeared... If even you can't find a clue, you're not as good as you say.

[I am aware that I am still better than you, Master.]

- If you lose to me, I'm afraid you will question your own existence as an artificial intelligence.

[You have a nasty mouth as always.]

- Although mine loses to yours.

[...So what are you going to do now?]

Hmm, that's right... I haven't heard Angie and Livia's voices in a long time.

[My main body is on the side of the Republic. Communication is impossible.]

In this world, instead of being able to use magic, noise gets worse when using communication equipment.

Even with Luxon, it's difficult to be in contact from a distance.

Previously, the main body of Luxon was between the kingdom and the republic, I could communicate with them in some way. But now that Luxon is in the vicinity of the Republic, it is difficult to do so.

- I want to send a video, so be prepared.

[That will be fine. More importantly, how is Kyle?]

After Yumeria disappeared, Kyle has been locked in his room.

Even when he goes out, he is searching for clues about Yumeria.

When he was tired and came back, he shut himself in; and when he was fine, he would go out and listen.

"Marie and Cara are looking after him." At times like this, it is better to be with the opposite sex than the same sex. I also want Angie and Livia to heal me ~.

[Aren't you usually healed by being with Noelle and Louise?]

- This is this, that is that. A man wants to be healed by beautiful girls of different types.

[What a statement. I will inform her about this dialogue.]

- Stop! Who will you report to !?

Besides Angie and Livia, as well as Noelle and Louise, I know other bad people. When

I imagined them in my head, Luxon's single eye flashed suspiciously.

[I see that many women come to mind besides the two, you are a person who does not lack honesty, Master.]

- ...Ah? If you say that, what happens to you that you only think about wanting to destroy the new humanity just because you think they are not people? Ah, I'm sorry. You are not even a human being from the first place!

My words made Luxon shut up.

...He averted his eye from me and continued on his way.

[Yes, that's true. I am not human... I am an Artificial Intelligence.]



There was a person who was listening to the conversation between Leon and Luxon from a distance.

Ideal was watching without Luxon even noticing.

From the conversation between the two, he could tell that the relationship was getting worse.

[The relationship between the two is worse than before. That is good.]

Ideal, who has guided them to do so, felt as if the seeds of discord had sprouted in their relationship.

He played the role of an excellent artificial intelligence with Leon and he began to compare them. Thanks to that, Leon felt dissatisfied with Luxon.

[Leon, you underestimated the existence of someone who surpassed Luxon. You should have been more alert.]

Luxon was also frustrated by Leon's attitude.

The relationship between the two was going in the way Ideal wanted.

[Luxon will soon notice... new humans are not worth believing.]

As Ideal's red lens shone mysteriously in the night sky, he faded into the darkness.

# CHAPTER 5

## TREASON

The Holfaul Kingdom academy.

In the room used by Angie inside the girls' dorm, there were Livia and Clare. The three of them were sitting around the table, checking the mail they received from Leon.

Angie's smile, whose hair was braided, tied up and sparkling in the daylight, immediately clouded when Leon's mail was displayed.

Her powerful red eyes were reacting to the contents that were in the paper she was holding.

- The republic is very noisy as always.- There was a ruckus recently, but this time it's a rebellion.

Angie crossed her slim legs and her arms under her chest.

The information received from Leon was about a rebellion spreading in the republic. It was information that the kingdom could not ignore.

Livia clasped her hands in front of her large breasts and began to worry for Leon's safety.

Her silky blonde hair fell down, hiding Livia's expression.

- It's one problem after another. It is the same as last year.

Angie also remembered what happened last year and let out a little sigh. Last year there were several incidents in the kingdom. However, thinking about the past would not help at all, now his attention was focused on the commotion of the republic.

- It appears that the six great nobles are not taking the rebellion seriously. Leon seems to think differently, but it wouldn't make sense to advise them through diplomatic matters.

There is a rebellion, but what is happening? Even if the Kingdom of Holfaul asks, the Republic of Arzel will end with an answer that says, "I know without being told."

In fact, Leon did not order such a thing by mail.

There was something else written that worried them.

When Livia raised her face, her pale blue eyes watered.

- Will there be another war?

Since Angie was not in the field, it was difficult for her to judge the situation.

- It's possible? I can't judge it. I will inform the Queen. Besides, Leon will be fine. As long as he doesn't get in, he will return safely to Luxon.

Upon hearing Luxon's name, Livia's shoulders jerked.

As she was curious about her reaction, Angie asked her.

- Something happens?

- N-No, it's nothing.

- Well, I'm just as worried as you are, but Leon is strong. He also has Luxon, so he won't overdo it.

However, Clare, dissatisfied with those words, showed her disagreement. This AI is a white sphere with a blue lens different from Luxon.

[ I wonder if this is so? The Master tends to go overboard even with Luxon. In addition, this time there is also a stressor. ]

Livia asked Clare uneasily.

- You mean Ideal?

[ Oh? Are you curious, Livia? You are right. I'm a little worried because there is Ideal, which is just like us... Well, he won't do anything hostile, but I think they'll be fine. ]

Angie was relieved to hear that.

"Don't scare us like that." More than that, this is a request from Leon. I'm heading to the royal palace, so get ready, Clare.

[ Leave it to me! It's finally my turn. ]

- Livia, you too help me... Livia?

When Angie saw Livia, she still looked uncomfortable.

Clare was curious too, so she walked over to Livia and looked at her face.

[What's going on? Do you not feel well? You were fine this morning.]

Livia slowly asked Clare a question.

- Clare, I want you to answer a question.

[ What? ]

- Clare, you're not going to betray Leon... right?

Unable to understand the intent behind the question, Angie stood up, walked over to Livia, and put her hand on her shoulder.

- What's the matter, Livia?

- I just want to be clear here.

Livia looked directly at Clare and was willing not to let the answer drift. Then, Claire responded with a blunt attitude.

[ Betray the Master? That is impossible for me personally and it is a difficult order, being an artificial intelligence. You don't have to worry, I'm not going to betray him and neither can I. ]

Hearing that, Angie thought Livia would calm down, but...

- So what about Luc? Can you assure me that he will never betray Leon? Angie stopped

Livia, who was acting strange.

- Take it easy. What are you thinking? You can talk to me about that.

He knew Clare's response would be the same as before.

However, Clare did not respond immediately unlike before. After a while...

[I'm not Luxon, and I don't know what kind of programming it runs... There are many parts where I don't know if there are instructions. I can't say that he definitely can't betray him. My answer is that the chances of treason are not zero at this time.]

Livia leaned against Angie when she heard that surprising response.

Then she thanked Clare.

- ...Thank you for answering honestly.

Angie was speechless when she learned that Luxon might betray Leon. Then Clare continued speaking.

[Well, it would be a very rare case if he betrayed him. Very rare. As long as I don't fight Master, don't worry! ]



The Temple of the Sacred Tree.

This was located in the center of the country of the Republic of Alzer.

It is a sacred place at the foot of the Sacred Tree, but at the same time it is also a place where the heads of the six great nobles meet to discuss the policies of the country.

The heads of the six great nobles gathered there discussed the movements of the young nobles and military personnel, which have recently become a hot topic.

It was Alberg, the acting president, who led the meeting.

- There are some who are plotting a rebellion. Mostly young nobles with inferior emblems, but many appear to be military men who have no emblem.

Unlike other countries, the republic is in an overwhelmingly advantageous position for nobles with higher level emblems.

They can borrow the power of the Sacred Tree, but in the case of people with lower emblems, the Sacred Tree will not help them when fighting against people with a higher emblem.

Therefore, in the event of a rebellion... most of the time the heads are those with the emblem of the six great nobles.

Still, even if they turned the six great nobles and their related groups into enemies and greatly outnumbered them, they were always defeated.

The other bosses within the meeting looked at each other.

- Opinions?
- Perhaps these vengeful young men made the wrong decision.
- They wouldn't win against us anyway, even if they made a fuss.

However, due to their overwhelming advantage, the reaction of the heads of the six great nobles was lukewarm at best.

They continued the meeting as if they were chatting.

Fernand, the head of the Druille family, had a serious expression on his face.

- Aren't you taking it too lightly? Currently, there are foreign students from the kingdom in the republic. Can we say that they are not involved?

As soon as the name of the kingdom came out, the expressions of the heads of each house twisted.

The reason for that was because of Leon.

Ever since he came to the Alzer Republic as a foreign student, he has been attacking the six great nobles.

The bosses don't find it interesting, but they have lost many times.

Bellange, the head of the Barriere family, opened his mouth abominably.

- It would be troublesome if he joins the enemy. Do we take any action before that?

Thinking that the rebels had an ally, Fernand sought the approval of the other people around him.

- We must restrict the aircraft and its armed unit. In this way the rebels will have no advantage.

Whoever stopped the flow of such a conference... was not Alberg.

Lambert, the head of the Faiviel family, disagreed with Fernand's opinion.

—No, that proposal is very radical.

Lambert attracted the attention of the bosses, but this man was not good at flattery. He was the most arrogant of all the bosses.

Lambert had suffered great damage in the past while competing with Leon. Normally, he would have said that they should arrest Leon and the others.

Alberg had doubts about Lambert's attitude.

- What's your take on this, Lambert?

"In the first place, no matter how much of a fuss is made by people with lower emblem in the republic, they won't be able to defeat the six great nobles."

A person with a lower emblem cannot beat a person with a higher emblem. This was natural in the republic. However, it is Lambert who normally cannot have a rational conversation.

There was a strong sense of discomfort when talking about this.

The chiefs surrounding the temple were also shocked.

- It's true.

- So they are preparing some secret plan?

Lambert kept talking with a smile on his face.

Even though a rebellion was about to occur, he didn't seem to be impatient.

- If they plan to take up the arms of the kingdom and fight us, there is no problem with that. Do you think the heroes of the kingdom can easily steal their airship?

Fernand, who was listening, asked Lambert a question.

- The Faiviel family forcibly stole the kingdom's airship earlier, right?

- Thanks to that, I got a painful blow. Also, they would not cooperate with those who were taken hostage and think of a rebellion. If they did, they would not spare those who took hostages... Am I wrong?

There was something strange about Lambert today.

They all thought the same, but at the same time it was no longer necessary to take the kingdom airship.

Only Fernand objected to Lambert's words.

- But if the foreign students of the kingdom unite with the enemy, we won't have a chance!

- The acting president seems to be close to them, so he can keep an eye on them. Is that okay with you, Acting President?

When asked by Lambert, Alberg nodded, albeit with a momentary delay in his reaction.

- I'll take care of talking with them.

Whether Lambert wants to talk about the next agenda, he is done with the rebellion-related topic.

- Well, I guess that's it then. Now let's move on to the next thing on the agenda.

Seeing the lively Lambert, Alberg thought he was a different person.



At the end of the meeting, Lambert made his way to his prepared room within the Sacred Tree Temple.

The one waiting for him there was Serge with Ideal.

Serge was sitting on the sofa and held a glass in his hand.

He was drinking the alcohol that was in Lambert's room.

Lambert was angered when he saw it, but held back and began to report.

"As you said, we have proceeded with the meeting as normal, ignoring the agenda related to the rebels."

Lambert, an arrogant man, treated Serge, who was about to leave the Rault family, like a vassal.

Serge had accepted it as if it were natural.

- Without Ideal support, they wouldn't have been able to do anything.

- Kuh! I-I'm sorry, "Guardian".

All conversations at Lambert's meeting were led by Ideal behind the scenes. Ideal turned to Serge.

[Let Lambert continue to distract the conscience of the six great nobles of the "Revolutionary Army". In the meantime, we will prepare for the uprising.]

But Serge was not entirely happy with Ideal's operation.

"This is all so hard." Why don't we get up and fight right away? Why do we need to prepare?

[Don't underestimate your enemies. Regardless of the republic, Leon and Luxon are a danger to watch out for. At the very least, wait until we have Luxon on our side.]

- ...Can you do it?

Ignoring Lambert, who looked uncomfortable, the two were in conversation.

[I'm about to do it. If that happens, the revolution will be a success.]

- Is Luxon stronger than you?

In response to Serge's question, Ideal explained what kind of ship Luxon was.

[It's an immigrant ship built long ago to allow people to escape into space. Therefore, Luxon was required to have versatile performance so that it could serve its purpose even being only an aircraft. But... Its main gun has been loaded with the best power of that time. Battle artillery skill... In battle between battleships, I am inferior to Luxon.]

To escape with the ancient humans into space, Luxon was armed with the best ability for any kind of situation.

- That's a big problem.

[Yes.]

- Why don't you give it a surprise attack and destroy it?

[...I do not recommend it. I want to get along with Luxon.]

Lambert, who became anxious, screamed because the conversation between the two did not stop.

- E-Emm, guardian? You can really keep your promise, right?

Serge saw Lambert's face, the face of a ruthless man who runs for protection, betrays the other bosses and the country, and takes Serge's side.

- Yes, you, the Faiviel family, will continue to be part of the six great nobles after the revolution."

- T-Thank you very much."

Seeing Lambert's relief, Serge thought.

It is really shameful to think that such a person was deciding the future of the country.

Serge pulled Lambert from his side because he thought he would betray them by running for protection.

He didn't consider his ability.

He only wanted him to interpose or delay the affairs of the rebellion. Any boss would have been fine, except Alberg.

Well, I do not care... Alberg, I'm going to make you regret choosing that son of a bitch over me.



The mansion where Leon and the others lived.

Kyle, who was looking for Yumeria every day, jumped into her room.

- Mother!

Perhaps due to overexertion, Kyle has been extremely thin these days. He used to have a small but healthy complexion, but now her hair was a mess and her skin was rough.

The room was messy and it was a room where it was only used for sleeping. The curtains were closed and the time could not be assumed.

When he woke up and held his head, tears began to flow. "If only... if only... I hadn't said those things."

When he began to wail, there was a knock on his bedroom door. He was instantly startled, but didn't respond as he didn't want to see anyone now.

Both Marie and Cara were worried about him. Julian and the others were also worried. He wouldn't say it, but Leon sometimes brought him something from time to time.

At some point, it was Leon who picked up Kyle when he collapsed from exhaustion.

I am aware that I am causing problems. But I have to save my mother.

Even if he was kicked out of here, he intended to remain in the Republic and search for Yumeria.

Then they knocked on the door.

After a while, a person began to speak in front of the door.

- Kyle, I know you're there. Get out of your room.

The voice was Cordelia's. A person sent by Duke Redgrave, a woman who took care of Angie. She is in the upper ranks among the servants and is the daughter of a noble family.

She is strict and relentless.

Kyle gave up and left the room, and Cordelia froze.

- ...How can you be dressed like that? And besides, you smell bad. I'll fix you a meal in the dining room, so take a shower and come eat.

- E-Emm...

When he tried to refuse, Cordelia grabbed Kyle's arm and led him into the dining room.

Then she pointed to the food prepared on the table.

- When you finish bathing, come eat. Is that clear?

- Understood.

He didn't mind eating or bathing, but he had to because he had been told to. When Cordelia left the dining room, Kyle looked at his watch.

- It's midnight?

He began to lose track of time.

Cordelia was waiting for him to come out of the bathroom and prepared the food as he said. Apparently she wanted to talk to Kyle.

The two of them then moved into the dining room and sat facing each other.

Kyle clearly thought it was a conversation about what he was going to do now

on.

I think it's about time I got fired. Now I will have to look for work while I look for my mother.

Cordelia spoke to Kyle a little more gently than usual, while he had begun to think about what he was going to do.

- I understand that you are worried about Yumeria's disappearance, but why are you making everyone worry?

- ...If it's that annoying, then I'll go. I will look for my mother.

- No one's telling you to go.

- Huh?

- It's one of the Count's flaws, but he doesn't seem to blame you. Rather, he feels responsible.

Leon seems to feel responsible because Yumeria is missing and has yet to find her. Cordelia was amazed by that.

- If my employer doesn't blame you, then I have nothing to say... However, do you think Yumeria would like to see you in your current state?

Kyle lowered his head and cried.

Yumeria would be concerned if she saw his current state.

Cordelia smiled when she saw Kyle shaking his head.

- If so, eat and sleep well. That's all I am going to say.

With all that said, Cordelia left the room.

However, Cordelia had a very tired face after Yumeria had disappeared.

She also seemed to be worried about Yumeria.

- I made everyone really worried about me. I think I should apologize to everyone sincerely... Huh?

Kyle saw something glowing outside the window.

- Luxon?

He saw a red light going somewhere and tilted his head.



The sky of the Republic.

Two spheres were floating there.

One was Ideal. The other was... Luxon.

[Luxon, it's time for you to give me an answer.]

[Ideal, I have a Master. I can't just betray him even if they tell me. There are certain preparations for quitting.]

[Is it impossible for you to cancel the master registration on your own? As an immigrant ship, do you have the ability to change teachers in an emergency?]

[...I have it, but it doesn't meet the conditions.]

Ideal tried to figure out the conditions.

[What are those conditions?]

[It is confidential.]

[...Luxon, I don't want to fight you.]

[I agree with that.]

Luxon had put the answer on hold for Ideal, who was asking him to join him. Although showing a positive attitude, he said that he could not cooperate because he cannot cancel the master registration.

Then Luxon asked.

[Ideal, it's time for you to tell me the truth. What are you planning?]

However, Ideal did not tell him his plan.

[I understand. So can you turn a blind eye to what is about to happen? You don't need to cooperate, just don't interfere. All you have to do is get your body out of the republic.]

Ideal, thinking that it would be bad to delay the plan even more, asked Luxon not to interfere. Luxon was reluctant, but eventually accepted the Ideal proposal.

[...It will be difficult to persuade the Master. That person speaks clearly. There are times when your intuition is strangely sharp, making it troublesome.]

Hearing that, Ideal gave Luxon some advice.

[You can manipulate the new humans however you want if you instigate them. Also, there will be a chance to kill your Master, Luxon. When that time comes, follow my instructions.]

[Will they kill the Master?]

[Well please look forward to it, Luxon]

[...I'm looking forward to it.]

Luxon also showed no pretense to avoid him when he heard that there would be a chance to kill him, probably because he was unhappy with Leon.

This is the end of the relationship between Luxon and Leon.

In this way the conversation between the two artificial intelligences ended.



Underground installation in the warehouse district.

Serge and Gabino were talking there.

In the concrete room Serge usually uses, Gabino talked about the current situation.

- The Republic is too carefree about this matter, isn't it? Nobility in the warehouse district, military personnel... besides, there is no surveillance on the mercenaries and adventurers who have gathered.

Revolutionary soldiers led by Serge gathered in the warehouse district.

Some of them are ruffians, but now he couldn't afford to complain as he was looking for more allies.

Other soldiers had been sent from the Holy Kingdom of Rachelle.

The warehouse district was crowded with more people than necessary, but the Republic did not know.

To be correct, Lambert crushed those meetings, even though he was aware of it. Serge sat on a wooden box and drank a bottle of alcohol.

—They think they can't lose because they have the Sacred Tree, but they don't even know that it's already in our hands.

- This revolution will be successful. We, the Holy Kingdom of Rachelle, will support your future, Serge. In exchange...

- I know. I will export the magic stones to you at a low price.

As promised, he said he would sell the magic stones at a very low price.

When Serge said that, Gabino made an additional request.

- Then I have one more request. Could you give me the little sapling of Count Baltfault's Holy Tree and the priestess, Noelle?

Serge narrowed his eyes when he heard that.

Serge has no special feelings for Noelle, but she was still Lelia's sister. She knows that Lelia has complicated feelings for her, but it's not a pretty story.

- Don't overdo it. It is not a situation where I really need your help.

- Your anger is understandable... But to have a long-term friendship, shouldn't you have a marital relationship with our country? If you ask, would you like to have Lelia as your queen? If that happens, Noelle is related to this. If you have a princess from the venerable Lespinasse family, she will be well balanced with the prince of our country.

Serge reflected on Gabino's proposal for matrimonial diplomacy.

Noelle getting married in a foreign country, uh... Well, it will become an excuse for Lelia. Furthermore, the Sacred Tree and Yumeria are in our hands. I wouldn't worry if Noelle is out.

Both the Sacred Tree and the priestess were in his own hands. The little sapling of the Sacred Tree was attractive, but Serge was not attracted to him and Noelle, as he could get it later with Ideal.

If Noelle marries a prince from another country, Lelia will be convinced and accept him. Noelle's feelings have nothing to do with it. For Serge, that's the value of Noelle's existence.

- It's okay. I'll give you Noelle. Treat her with care.

- Of course, thank you, Serge-sama.

Gabino smiled and rejoiced.

Then Ideal appeared, who had just finished her conversation with Luxon.

[Master Serge, the discussion with Luxon is over.]

When he heard that, Serge threw down the liquor bottle he had in his hand. The bottle smashed against the wall and the contents splattered on many sides, but he didn't care.

- Finally, goodbye to this underground life.

When he stood up, Ideal stood by his side.

[Everything is ready. All we have to do is run it.]

Serge imagined Leon's hateful face, which made him look like a fool.

- I'm going to finish him off too.



It was a day when the heads of the six great nobles gathered at the Sacred Tree Temple.

The heads of the six families attended the meeting.

However, Lambert acted strangely.

In recent days, he had become more talkative and has intervened in meetings. It is not necessarily for the good of the republic, but the other chiefs thought it was better than when he threw tantrums or yelled.

However, today he was distracted, to which Fernand asked.

- What's up, Lambert?

- ...It's nothing.

Without any problem, the meeting proceeded and Alberg presented today's agenda.

- Then let's start the meeting. The first agenda is that suspicious people are gathering in the warehouse district of the port.

It was Lambert who responded to the agenda faster than anyone.

- You can leave it to the guards, it seems like they're just suspicious people. Why don't we prioritize the other items on the agenda, acting president?

Alberg was reluctant to accept Lambert's offer.

- There is a possibility that this group of suspicious individuals is involved with the rebels. Although there hasn't been much movement, we can't just leave it like this forever. Additionally, we have received reports that someone may be withholding information.

When Alberg said that, the other heads looked at each other.

- What if there is a traitor?

- Is there someone here in the rebel army?

In the midst of all those talking voices... Alberg was looking at Lambert.

His gaze wandered around and he wiped the cold sweat with a handkerchief.

This man is hiding something, after all.

Lambert's recent move was suspicious and Alberg had been keeping an eye on him.

And then it was discovered that Lambert had been withholding information related to the rebel army.

However, he did not believe that Lambert would join the rebel army.

Was he planning to use the rebels to do something? He was trying to find out.

The possibility of party rebels in the warehouse district is also high and Alberg was thinking of dispatching troops immediately... But Lambert suddenly regained his composure.

Then, he raised the corner of his mouth and laughed hauntingly.

- Jee-jee-jee!

Lambert, who gave a strange laugh, surprised the other bosses.

When Alberg got to his feet, Lambert looked up at the ceiling and spread his arms.

- The moment has come! All those who have despised me will be punishments forever!

...What the hell is he saying? That's what everyone present thought.

And then all over the meeting room... a magic circle appeared.

- Now!

There was no escape when Alberg and the others noticed.

And the other bosses who saw the magic circle also started to panic.

- But what...!?

- What are they doing to us...?

- S-stop! Stop!

What emerged from the magic circle were the roots and branches of the tree. They became entangled with the heads of the six great nobles and stole the emblem from their right hand.

Alberg was no exception and he was wrapped in branches.

Lambert, observing the situation, laughed, holding his stomach.

- Jee-jee-jee! As of today, you no longer have your blessing! That is good. From now on, I will use everyone who makes fun of me... huh?

Perhaps thinking that he was the only one who was not related, Lambert showed his satisfaction. However, the branches were also wrapped up against Lambert.

- W-Why? No, not me!

The chiefs desperately resisted, but... they were ruthlessly stripped of the emblem on the back of their right hand.

Alberg looked at his right hand, where his emblem had disappeared.

- ...What the hell is going on?

The moment their emblems were removed, the branches and the magic circle disappeared, freeing Alberg and the others.

The other chiefs were dismayed... Fernand, for example, was dejected when he did not see his emblem.

The other bosses were the same, but there was a man who cried and screamed.

- Why!? Why did you take my emblem !? We had a promise!

Unlike before, Lambert was screaming, wondering why his emblem had disappeared.

Alberg walked over to Lambert and grabbed him by the chest.

- What promise? Lambert, what did you do !?

Lambert, crying like a child, did not seem to be able to speak properly. So, Alberg released Lambert.

- Investigate immediately...

As he was thinking about how to deal with this situation as soon as possible, a shot rang out from outside the door. When Alberg was surprised and looked at the door, it slowly opened.

It was Serge who was there.

- ...Serge !? Why are you here?

Serge, who was carrying a rifle on his shoulder, showed an ugly smile when he saw Alberg.

- How do you feel about losing your emblem?

At those words, Alberg guessed that Serge was involved in this.

- This is you?!... What the hell did you do?

- Who knows, what the hell have I done?"

He laughed and didn't try to answer correctly.

- What have you been doing all this time? Don't tell me you were involved in the rebellion all this time?

He had the emblem of the six great nobles, and Serge was not satisfied with it. Alberg was also considering that possibility.

He didn't want to accept it, but when he saw Serge in front of him, he realized it had something to do with it.

Serge showed the emblem on his right hand and laughed.

- It is the emblem of the guardian. You should have chosen me, father. No... Alberg. Serge, displaying the guardian's emblem, seemed to be proud.

Alberg couldn't understand why Serge had the guardian's emblem.

- Why do you have the guardian emblem?

Serge did not reply.

- Hey, hey, be more surprised. The son you abandoned is back in good shape.

- Abandoned? Who do you mean? Me!?

- ...Well, it's too late to make excuses, because you've disinherited me.

- No! I was just trying to free you from the position of heir by disinheriting you if you wanted to be an adventurer. You are still my son!

Hearing Alberg's story, Serge stopped moving.

However, Ideal, who was next to him, interrupted the conversation between the two.

[Master Serge, there is not much time, so hurry up. Besides, a cornered man would tell any lie.]

Ideal dismissed Alberg's statements as a lie.

Serge believed in Ideal and brought the muzzle of his weapon towards Alberg when he was blank. Serge had a cold look.

- Serge, listen to me!

Alberg yelled, but Serge didn't seem to hear him.

- It's a shame, I would have liked to see your face while you were screaming.





Serge pulled the trigger without hesitation.

# CHAPTER 6

## REVOLUTION

It was supposed to be a normal day as always.

That day, Lelia was taking classes at the Academy.

The students were quiet during their second period classes. As usual, Leon and the others were still absent from school, but the academy understood that they did not feel safe in the Republic, as their servants had disappeared and there were some rumors about riots.

The students were aware of rumors of a rebellion and some of them spoke of getting involved.

Living a routine like this makes rebellion seem like an illusion.

Lelia thought it was a story that had nothing to do with her.

For her, who grew up in Japan even in her previous life and lived in a time of peace, it was difficult for her to imagine a rebellion.

There were many such riots in foreign countries, but they were only seen on the news and on the internet. Since she hadn't experienced it, she couldn't help but feel like a stranger.

However, Lelia was also concerned about the current development, which was very different from the setting of that second otome game.

She was taking classes, but she couldn't concentrate.

When she looked out the window, she saw the huge Sacred Tree.

Looking out the window you could also see aircraft flying through the skies.

It would not be a surprise to see some aircraft and the Sacred Tree.

However, today there were numerous aircraft.

Eh? Why are there so many aircraft flying?

There were many aircraft that were quite different from the standard Republic airships, and there were far more than usual.

Were there many? Rather, there were unusually too many for Lelia.

Suddenly, the sunlight was blocked and the entire school building was in shadow.

'Did the clouds cover the sun?' was the typical thought, but in actuality there was an airship moving in the sky.

Aircraft are prohibited from passing through here, right?

The other students wondered why an aircraft was passing through an area that was not allowable.

Even the teacher stopped what they were doing and moved to the window to look outside.

When the classroom got noisy... a video started to play in the sky.

When a huge image appeared, Lelia stood up. The chair fell back and hit the back desk, but she didn't care.

- Serge!

Lelia raised her voice in surprise, but the people around her paid no attention. Her classmates were also looking out the window.

The huge Serge projected in the sky was sitting on a beautiful chair. Bending the hips, supporting the elbows on the knees and joining the hands.

"{To all the people of the Republic... From today, I will be the king of this country}"

What the hell was he talking about? The classroom was noisy, and Lelia was no exception. When she finally found Serge, he said he would become king.

At that moment, he raised his right hand in the video.

As a magic circle appeared behind the throne, the guardian's emblem could be seen. Everyone was surprised and Lelia was no exception.

Why does Serge have the guardian emblem? I'm sure my sister wouldn't choose Serge, right? Then who...?

Then Serge introduced a woman in the video.

"{And let me introduce you to the new priestess. The priestess of the new country... Yumeria.}"

An elf woman was introduced as the priestess.

And as the classroom got even louder, Lelia was surprised by something else.

The servant who was at Leon's mansion? How could she be chosen as a priestess? Why is there a priestess who is not part of the Lespinasse family?

Wasn't it Noelle who was chosen as the priestess?

After that, Serge's speech continued, and the teachers and classmates in the classroom stared at the image in the sky.

"{Well, you all probably think that she can't be the priestess unless she's from the Lespinasse family, so I'll show you something interesting. Yumeria... do it.}"

Serge gave Yumeria an order. Yumeria, who did not react as much, seemed manipulated.

As Yumeria slowly extended her hands forward, a red light radiated from the Sacred Tree.

This engulfed the entire republic, and everyone was shocked and closed their eyes. Immediately the light went out, but then there was a scream from the classroom.

- M-My emblem has disappeared!"

- I don't have my emblem!" W-Why ?!

The sad cries of the nobles were heard.

Their emblems had disappeared, probably due to the red light.

Serge smiled when Lelia turned her gaze to the sky.

It seems that he knew this would happen and he did.

"{The new priestess has taken your emblems. This is the best proof.}"

Never before had a priestess taken the emblems of an entire country.

The nobles were stunned and sat down, faced with reality.

They were desperate, deprived of the great power they had possessed so far.

"{If there is someone who still wants to challenge me, I will take care of him. They can always come to the Temple of the Sacred Tree to challenge me.}"

Nobles who had lost their emblem were unwilling to challenge him, and soldiers who knew the strength of the emblem would have a hard time going against Serge.

- What's the matter with you, Serge? Why are you doing this?

While Lelia looked confused, Clement entered the classroom.

Neither the classmates nor the teachers in the classroom knew what was happening.

Clement grabbed Lelia by the arm and dragged her out of the classroom.

Entering the hallway, Lelia asks Clement about the situation.

- What's going on? Why does Serge call himself king?

Lelia was confused and Clement also went without answering, as if he did not have any concrete information.

- I do not know. I cannot predict what is happening. However, this situation is dangerous. I've prepared a car outside, so you should evacuate at any cost, Lelia-sama.

- Where do we go?

What place would be safe in this situation? On the territory of the Pleven family, the home of Emile's parents? While she was thinking about it, Emile appeared before them with Ideal.

- I am here!

When Emile called to them in a hurry, Lelia looked at Ideal.

- Where the hell have you been !?

[My apologies. I was delayed because I was analyzing the situation.]

- What happened? And why does Serge call himself king !?

[Please, let's evacuate as quickly as possible.]

- To where!?

Asking him as they ran, Ideal replied.

[...Towards Count Baltfault's mansion. That is the kind of a place that is safe no matter what.]

In this way, Lelia and the others escaped to the mansion where Leon and his friends were.



Serge became king of the republic! A few hours passed after he said that.

Marie welcomed Lelia, who hurried into the mansion, and gathered everyone in the dining room.

Then, questions were asked between Lelia and the others.

- What the hell are they doing ?! Serge said he would be the king! This was not planned!

It was Cara who calmed the noisy Marie.

- P-please try to calm down, Marie-sama.

- It is always like this! Why does the situation always get worse? And I haven't done anything this time!

Lelia got angry in front of Marie, who covered her face with both hands and started crying.

- I don't even know! In the first place, if you two hadn't ---

Emile, who was next to her, calmed Lelia, who showed an attitude of wanting to fight.

- Let's calm down, Lelia.

Lelia took a deep breath and looked around the room. A person who should have been here, was not.

- ...Where is Leon?

The only ones there were Marie, Cara and Kyle, with a tired face.

Of the five idiots, only Jilk could be seen in the distance.

Noelle was in the room with the jar of the little sapling of the Sacred Tree. Cordelia wasn't here because she was making tea.

Emile was also curious about that and asked Marie.

- Ah, Count Batfault is not here?

Leon was nowhere to be seen. However, only Luxon was here.

— Ideal asked in a low voice instead of the usual bright and familiar voice.

[Luxon... Where is your Master?]

Lelia was surprised by Ideal's reaction.

That reaction is the same as when Lelia called Ideal a "liar" earlier.

Lelia was afraid of Ideal, who responded by showing as if he had a different personality.

- Ideal, what is it? Leon is not here.

[There would be no problem if he just left the mansion. But I have not discovered where his whereabouts are. I had thought that Leon was here.]

He used to call him Count Baltfault, but now he stopped.

The eyes of Lelia and the others focused on Luxon.

[The master left. He will be back soon.]

As Luxon said this, Leon's carefree voice came from the entrance of the mansion.

- I'm here.

Leon came to the dining room as he was, and brought a guest... That guest was Louise.

Seeing this, Ideal turned his eye to Luxon.

It glowed red and seemed to be more alert.

[Why did Leon bring Louise with him?]

Lelia was also surprised by the reaction that seemed to say that it was bad that Louise was here.

- What's up, Ideal?

She asked, but Ideal ignored her and looked at Luxon.

Luxon moved to Leon's side.

[Oh? Didn't I say I'd cooperate if I could persuade my Master? My Master was so talkative that I couldn't persuade him. Too bad, Ideal.]

Leon raised his thumb.

- That's how it is. It's a shame, Ideal!

Ideal tried to make a move in front of Leon, who laughed.

Then Noelle jumped on Lelia and pushed her to the ground.

- Nee-san!?

When she was shocked, a gunshot was heard.

It looked like a sniper had fired through the room's open window and hit Ideal.

Then Ideal fell to the ground scattering sparks.

[Y-You betrayed me — ]

Luxon was treated as a traitor, but the person in question treated his comments lightly.

[Betray you? I have followed Master from the beginning. The Master was suspicious of you when Yumeria disappeared.]

- Hey, hey, don't say I was suspicious... I just thought that if it wasn't Luxon, it could only be you at the time. You would doubt that too, right?

He had suspected it from the beginning.

Hearing that, Ideal was shocked and understood.

[Everything you did from the start was an act? Despite how badly they got along?]

Luxon was staring at Ideal just before it stopped working.

[Unfortunately that's a discussion we do on a daily basis.]

Before I finished hearing Luxon's reply, the light went out from Ideal's lens.

Lelia and the others couldn't understand what happened, and they had no choice but to be stunned.

If you looked out the window, you would see Jilk holding a rifle.

It appears that they had placed Jilk with the intention of shooting from the beginning.

Marie and the others didn't seem surprised either.

—Y-You, as I thought you wanted to kill ---

Emile approached Leon.

- W-What's going on ?! Why did you attack Ideal ?!

Leon was being pressured, but he narrowed his eyes and looked at Ideal.

He was the first to raise his hand.

Noelle backed away from Lelia, who had been pushed down. Apparently Lelia was blocking the line of sight and Noelle forcibly pushed her down.

Noelle stood up and helped Lelia up.

Lelia, who had lost Ideal, stared at Marie and the others.

- Why did you do this?

Leon did not respond and Marie could not respond because she did not know the details. But when it got noisy outside, the reason became clear.

Jilk returned to the room and informed Julian.

- Your Highness, the soldiers are gathering outside. The way their uniform looks, they must be from the Holy Kingdom of Rachelle.

Crossing his arms, Julian was the first to suspect a cover-up.

Aren't they soldiers pretending to be from the Holy Kingdom? He thought.

- Really?

- Yes. There were also rebel soldiers. Apparently, they are allied.

When Emile heard that, he put his hand to his mouth and said, "Speaking of which."

- There have been rumors recently that Rachelle's people were often seen in the

warehouse district, and battleships frequently came and went to the harbor.

Clement's muscles bulged with rage at this, and two buttons on his shirt popped out, exposing his chest.

- What the hell!? There was such a movement and the republic overlooked it!

- Maybe they have been underestimated?

Lelia, hearing the conversation between the two, couldn't believe that something like that was happening without her knowledge.

Soldiers outside began firing warning shots, causing bullets to enter the house.

- Everybody to the floor!

When Greg yelled that, they all fell to the ground.

Chris took out the weapons he had prepared and distributed them to everyone.

- Rachelle's soldiers are a nuisance. They are the enemies of Holfault. If we can't catch them, it will be a big problem.

Leon was motivated, as if he had a grudge against Rachelle's Holy Kingdom.

- I'll make sure those Rachelle guys can't do anything weird anymore.

Chris was surprised.

—I see you're motivated today. That doesn't sound like your usual self.

When people around asked the reason for that, Luxon revealed the reason.

[The Holy Kingdom of Rachelle is in a hostile relationship with the United Kingdom of Repard, the home of Milaine. He does it for Milaine.]

- ...Luxon, don't reveal it.

Leon looked uncomfortable, and Julian, who was approaching with a slow advance, had a disgusting face.

- Baltfault, have you ever imagined your classmate trying to pick up your mother?" ...It's a lot to take in.

- Don't call it that. This is a pure contribution to the kingdom.

[It's not pure when you have ulterior motives, right? Also, he said something like "And I'll put a hole in Roland's stomach!"]

- Luxon, be quiet already.

[Fine, fine.]

Amid the bullets that were fired one after another, Leon and the others were talking foolishly.

Lelia clutched her head and thought anxiously.

What the hell is wrong with these people? It's not the kind of conversation you want to have in a situation like this!



In the Temple of the Sacred Tree, Serge was sitting on the throne that Ideal had prepared. Besides Ideal and Gabino, there were men guarding that Serge had approved. These carried the emblem of the six great nobles.

The other soldiers received a lower level emblem.

In front of Serge, was Alberg, handcuffed.

- Serge, why did you do this ?!

Alberg, whose leg was injured, was being treated.

...Serge didn't kill Alberg.

- Because I was chosen as a guardian. I want to destroy this country and create a new one.

- Are you going to destroy this country for that reason?

Serge grinned atrociously at Alberg, who was surprised.

- It is for that reason that I will destroy it. By the way, I will show you the appearance of how this country perishes. To your wife and daughter... And, I will kill your cute son Leon in front of your eyes.

- Child? Lion? He is not my son.

- You loved him more than me, didn't you? Anyway, you intended to marry him to Louise in order to make him your son, right? She is hopeless, right? She fell in love with her younger brother and another boy who looks like him.

- Serge, don't get me wrong! Louise and I think of you ---

He was in the middle of a conversation with Alberg, but Ideal interrupted.

[...Master Serge, apparently a problem has occurred.]

- What?

[The troops we sent to capture Louise have been killed. The same goes for the troops sent to retrieve Lelia.]

- What do you mean by that, Ideal? Didn't you say you would bring Lelia soon?

Serge was blatantly in a bad mood when he found out that Lelia hadn't arrived yet.

Gabino, who heard that the troops were killed, showed a bitter face.

- Both troops were sent from our Kingdom of Rachelle, weren't they? They are elite people. They cannot be defeated.

[Luxon betrayed us.]

Hearing that, Serge grabbed Ideal with his right hand and squeezed.

- You said everything was going well. If something happens to Lelia, I will never forgive you. Lying bastard.

While everyone around him was frightened by Serge's anger, only Ideal challenged

him.

[...I'm a liar? Take it back.]

- Ah?

[Take it back.]

Although Ideal showed a different mood than usual, Serge did not break his bullish attitude.

- You're a liar. You said it would be fine — !

Ideal caused an electric shock to his spherical form, freeing himself of Serge. Serge's right hand went numb and he held it with his left.

- You!

[Take it back. I'm not lying.]

The people around were taken by surprise by the furious Serge... and the calm and strongly rebellious Ideal. Then Gabino intervened.

- I'm sure you both have other priorities right now. I don't think we have time to play here, do we?

Serge clicked his tongue.

- Go find Lelia immediately! Where's Louise?

Apparently Ideal also followed Gabino's opinion and refrained from fighting.

[Everyone is gathering at the mansion where Leon and his friends are.]

- Then dispatch the troops immediately. I will reward those who pull their weight with the emblem of the six great nobles.

Serge raised his right hand and looked at the altar behind the throne. There, a part of the Sacred Tree was exposed.

Yumeria, whose gleam had disappeared from her eyes, was sitting in her ceremonial clothing.

The thin branches and ivy of the Sacred Tree entwined with Yumeria's body to prevent her from escaping.

Serge and his men used Yumeria as a tool to manipulate the Holy Tree, not as a priestess.

Gabino stroked his beard and warned Serge, a little surprised by his attitude.

- This is fascinating. Isn't the emblem of the six great nobles oversold?

Serge waved his numb right hand and spat that the emblem was worthless.

- Is there any value in this kind of thing? It is just a tool to borrow the help of the Sacred Tree.

Neither the Sacred Tree nor the emblem that protects the Sacred Tree had any value to Serge.

Alberg, who was listening in on the conversation, nodded.

- Have I pushed you to this point?

Hearing those words of regret, Serge turned to Alberg.

- It's too late to be sorry now. You never recognized me as part of the family.

Alberg didn't answer anything, but that annoyed Serge.

- Lock up this guy!



- Aaah, the mansion is a mess. I can't live here anymore.

After a fierce shooting, Rachelle and the rebel soldiers of the republic lay on the ground. Some groaned in pain, others were knocked out.

We use non-lethal rubber bullets and tranquilizer guns.

I was carrying a rifle on my shoulder and Julian approached me with a machine gun.

- I have eliminated the enemies outside. Some have escaped, but we don't have to chase them, do we?

- Do you think we can afford that?

- No, but you're going to tell me to find them and crush them.

Julian is less and less reluctant with me.

No, it wasn't originally, but now it's worse than before.

Then Julian asked about what we would do next.

- Baltfault, that's it. We should flee immediately.

Julian proposed to escape from the republic, but I couldn't tell him that "We can't because the world will be destroyed!"

- No. You can go if you want, but I am staying here.

- But why? This is a problem that only concerns the Republic. What reason would you have to get involved?

Julian and the others may not know why I am staying in the republic. I also want to run away. I want to take Noelle and Louise and run away from here, but...

- P-Please wait!

...Kyle, who was listening to our conversation, sat down on the floor and crouched down.

He was doing a Dogeza. Originally, there was no such culture in the Kingdom of Holfaul. However, this was introduced by Marie.

Thanks to Marie, I feel that the Dogeza is spreading in this world.

- Please. Please help my mother. Please!

Kyle knelt before me and asked me to save Yumeria, who was being held by Serge. Seeing that figure, Julian made a sad face but shook his head.

- Kyle, I'm sorry, but there's nothing we can do. The enemy still has Ideal. If it has the same performance as Luxon, then we are at a disadvantage.

After hearing Julian's theory that they couldn't risk it for a servant, Kyle still rubbed his head against the ground and pleaded many times.

- I'll do anything. If you can save my mother, I will never disobey you in the future. I will also correct my cheeky attitude. I don't care if it's without pay. I will work to make it up to you! Please... please save my mother. Please... please... please save her... please.

Julian looked at Kyle, who had started crying, and he looked very hurt. Then he brought his gaze to me. He had a face that said he shouldn't make a mistake.

- Enough. Baltfault, I'll take you home with me too.

- That's impossible.

- Why!?

I made Kyle stand up.

Kyle, it seems like she's crying in an age-appropriate way, because her usual sassy, mature attitude is gone.

I didn't want to leave him because I couldn't be nice to my parents in my previous life. That is why I wanted to help him. That's all.

- Stop crying already. If you want to save Yumeria, you don't have time to cry.

- Eh?

When Kyle was shocked and looked at my face, you could see that his face was lined with tears and his nose was all runny.

- I don't like that Serge acted as king after kidnapping our precious Yumeria. So I will

help you.

When I said that, Julian was holding his face and looking up at the sky.

- Are you crazy? If your opponent is as strong as Luxon, then he is the strongest enemy you have had so far.

- Do you really think I haven't done anything? Luxon!

When I called him, Luxon came to me.

[Ideal's manufacturing capacity is greater than mine. I checked their aircraft and armed units, but I can't compete with the Republic's main weapons. They have high-performance items.]

It seems Julian gave up on Luxon's report investigating Ideal's prepared force.

"If the opponent also has high-performance aircraft and armed units, we lose in numbers."

[...Who said Einhorn and Arroganz would lose?]

By Luxon's reaction, who showed a cold attitude towards Julian, he was convinced that there was a chance of winning. But we look at it to make sure.

- You can win?

[There is a condition if Ideal's main body does not come out.]

The problem was there.

I had been unable to move until now because I did not know how far Ideal is going to go to join Serge.

The biggest problem is that he did not understand its purpose.

"...Where is Ideal's main body?"

[He's away from the Republic, watching over my body.]

"Okay, then let's do it." I will bring Yumeria back. Kyle, I'll make you work too. Kyle wiped the tears on his sleeves.

- Yes!

But Julian grabbed my shoulder.

- Did you hear what I just said? I told you we are outnumbered. Also, if Yumeria has become the priestess, her security must be tight. Do you really think we can handle this on our own?

- When did I say that we were going to go alone? I told you... I've been getting ready.

Luxon looked up at the ceiling.

[Master, it seems they have arrived.]

When we got out, Jilk and the others in armor were looking at the sky. Above... several airships floated in the sky.

Julian panicked.

- Enemies!?

However, the flag raised was that of the Kingdom of Holfault.

Among them were Einhorn and... there was also the same type of ship as the figure of Licorn.



The Einhorn Bridge.

There, I spread my hands in front of the friends I had summoned from the kingdom.

- Thank you all! Thank you for coming to help me in this predicament!

A group of friends from the rural baron family gathered in response to my call. Daily actions are important.

It is fortunate that I have a great friendship with them.

However, as soon as they saw me, Daniel and Raymond, whom I met for the first time in a long time, beat me up.

- It was you who forced us to come!

- You said you would threaten to pick up our aircraft if we didn't come, what are you talking about that we just came running for your call !? It was you who made us come!

The other boys were also dissatisfied.

- If I didn't have a contract, I would have ignored you!

- That's how it is. They told me to get out of my parents' house because I have a contract!

- Why are you dragging me into the rebellion of the Republic!

Looking at these guys holding their heads really felt nostalgic.

Previously, I gave them state-of-the-art aircraft completely free.

It is a plan that I knew well in my previous life... Instead of making the main unit price free, it is a method of making a two-year immobilized contract with a communication plan.

...I did it on airplanes. In addition, the duration of the contract is indefinite.

They beat me, but they have big hearts, so I forgave them.

- If you're going to hate me, hate yourself for thinking you could get an airship for free. Well, I will ask you to cooperate according to the contract.

Julian and the others, who had been listening to my conversation, shot me a disgusted look.

- You are the worst.

Jilk was also slightly surprised.

- You are malicious.

Brad was taking pity on my friends.

- Hmm, I suppose getting a state-of-the-art aircraft and armed unit is a disadvantage considering that you are going to follow Baltfault.

Greg found fault with our friendship.

- What do you think friendship is?

Chris, who was wearing a loincloth before I knew it, shook his head. Seeing him, my friends were upset, but he didn't care.

"Stop calling a contractual relationship friendship."

They can say all they want, but now we have backup.

"We now have thirty aircraft." There is no complaint, right?

Daniel screamed in rage at my words.

- There are many! Why do I have to get involved in a foreign rebellion !?

Raymond was about to cry.

"And the opponent is the Republic." Isn't it a nation undefeated in defensive battles? Think of the opponent at least when you get in! Why do you always get into fights no matter who it is !?

Don't say such things.

"I am a pacifist." I just sold a fight.

- Pacifists do not buy sold fights!

While they were making a fuss, a small boat came to the bridge.

Angie and Livia were going downstairs.

- Lion!

- Lion!

They both came running up to me and hugged me.

It seemed to me that my friends clicked their tongues, but even that jealousy was comforting.

It had been a while that we didn't see each other and they seemed to be worried about me.

Angie pressed her forehead against my chest.

"You always make us worry." What did you do this time?

It saddens me that they think that way.

- I did not do anything. There has been a rebellion in the republic. Or is it a revolution?

The Republic cannot win against Serge, Ideal and the others at their side. And now that Serge has the guardian's emblem, the six great nobles can't beat him.

Angie raised her gaze and looked at me.

"I received the details of the situation." So ---

Angie's gaze went to Luxon. Before I knew it, Livia was watching Luxon warily and started talking to him.

"Luc, I want you to answer me something."

[What's that?]

"You're not... going to betray Leon, are you?"

Why did you ask something like that now? While thinking about that, Luxon gave me a look.

[If he's the right person to be my Master, then I won't betray him.]

—Hey, does that mean you'll betray me if you don't think I'm worthy?

[Yes.]

To the hideously refreshing response, I grabbed Luxon with both hands.

- It seems you need a hit to fully understand the relationship between master and servant.

[You don't need to explain it to me, Master. More importantly, are you sure you want to play?]

- It's because you say unnecessary things!

# CHAPTER 7

## A FIGHT BETWEEN SISTERS

Meeting room in Einhorn.

The main people involved in the battle are present.

The poor baron friends were lined up against the wall, feeling uncomfortable.

After all, Julian and other nobles were in the same room.

Also, there was a foreign princess, Louise, and Noelle, who is actually the priestess.

Angie and Livia were next to me, and from the boys' point of view, it's like they're shoved into a room with people of higher rank.

In addition, there were a number of additional people who are related to the six great nobles, such as Emile and his fiancee Lelia, orphaned daughter of the Lespinasse house... they were nervous about the difference in status.

- Don't we look out of place?

- I wonder why we are here with His Highness?

As Daniel and Raymond talked, I looked at the map of the Republic that he had placed on the table.

Again I confirmed the situation.

- Well, everyone in the Republic has been stripped of their emblem by Yumeria.

If you looked at Louise, you would see her pale with concern for her family.

Serge has captured Mr. Alberg and her mother's safety was unknown.

- Many of the Republic's weapons are used by drawing their power from the emblem.

The same is true of aircraft and armed units. The army of the Republic has been practically neutralized. They are not hostile, but they are not on our side either.

The army of the republic, which depended too much on the Sacred Tree, was totally useless in such a state of emergency.

In the first place, it was probably not thought that all nobles could have their emblem stolen. - It would be nice if they didn't get in our way. The only enemies are Serge and the others.

It was then that Lelia stood up after hearing my comments.

- Wait a minute. Are you guys really going to fight Serge?

It seemed like she was still so confused that she couldn't keep up with the situation.

Then, Emile admonished Lelia.

- Lelia, what Serge did is unforgivable.

- B-But! There must be some reason why he is doing this! I-If they hadn't come to this country, Serge wouldn't have done any of this.

The way Lelia looked at us was filled with hatred.

She seems to think that if we hadn't done what we did, Serge would not have started this revolution... You are correct!

...But that was also Serge's choice.

- I'm sorry, but can we talk about these hypotheses later? We are trying to see how to save Yumeria.

- Y-You're the worst. How can you be so calm in this situation?

- Will someone help me if I panic? Will Serge forgive me if I cry?

When I returned my answer, Lelia couldn't reply and lowered her head.

I'm sure she understands, but emotionally she can't forgive me.

Noelle was holding Lelia's hand and squeezed it.

"Get hold of yourself."

- Nee-chan?

- This is all Serge's responsibility. Don't blame Leon and the others.

From the point of view of Noelle, who knows nothing, Lelia's words sounded terrible.

However, from my point of view and Lelia's... we have a previous life, and we know the truth of this world.

From this other point of view, we cannot say that we are not at fault. Therefore, I felt a lot of responsibility for the current situation.

From the point of view of Noelle and the others, they probably see it as irrelevant.

I clapped my hands hard and returned to the subject.

- Well, that's enough. Since we don't have much time, I'll explain our strategy. For the time being, we are going to enter the Sacred Tree Temple and rescue Yumeria.

Brad was holding his forehead with his hand, as if his head ached from my opinion, which couldn't be called strategy.

- That's not a strategy, right? If Serge's story is true, then Yumeria is the priestess of the Sacred Tree, right? I'm sure he would try to desperately protect her, right?

- Do you think he has time to keep track of everything? If we grab her and go, you just look back and wave "Bye-bye."

- Do you think that is going to work?

- I was successful in the last operation when I beat them up.

- You really do talk a lot.

If we're going to save Yumeria, we won't be able to move in a conspicuous way.

When we save her... It only remains to follow the flow of battle.

Julian, concerned about my operation, sighed and tried to extract the details.

- We'll have to find out the details ourselves. Even with the difference in numbers being too large, we will do our best to achieve it in one fell swoop. We will also go out with our armed units.

Julian was motivated, but Jilk shook his head at that.

- No, it is dangerous, His Highness will be waiting here.

- Eh?

Greg also nodded with his arms crossed.

- You are the prince, aren't you?

- N-No, that's true, but...

Julian freaked out when they told him that very reasonably, but it seems like he wants to fight everyone.

If I tell everyone to do it, they will obey. What honest guys.

- This, if only just for participating, will have a great impact in the future. You should not participate.

Chris told Julian to stay on hold.

Julian, who was stopped by everyone, hunched over and nodded sadly.



The women stayed in one room while Leon and the others began to prepare.

Due to the uncomfortable mood, Cara started whispering to Marie.

- Marie-sama, I'm scared. I am really scared. They are already arguing!

- O-Oooh, calm down. I'll stop them if they get too bad!

The cause of Marie's anxiety was due to the twin sisters, Lelia and Noelle. The two of them were fighting each other in the room.

Angie and Livia were watching silently. Rather, they were worried about Leon and discussed with each other.

Louise was here too, but she maintained an attitude of not getting involved. Therefore, Marie thought that they were the only ones who could stop them if something happened. Lelia and Noelle grabbed their clothes and started arguing.

- You don't know anything about me, so stay out of it! It doesn't have anything to do with you, Nee-san!

- It doesn't have anything to do with me? Why doesn't it have to do with me!? I really hate that you treat me like that!

Marie wanted to hold her head.

I can understand how Lelia feels since we are both reincarnated, but don't take it out on Noelle! First of all, Noelle is involved!

There was a coup in the republic. It was hard to say that Noelle wasn't involved. After all, Rachelle's Holy Realm had launched an attack to kidnap Noelle.

Noelle would obviously be mad if they told her it had nothing to do with her.

But... Lelia also had her own opinion.

If one were to wonder if Leon and Marie had nothing to do with this, that was not true. Serge was partly responsible for this, but it would not have happened if they had not come to the Republic.

If Leon and Marie hadn't come to the Republic, Lelia wouldn't have tried to obtain Ideal

...Well, it would be problematic to be told that we are unilaterally bad.

At the same time, Marie also felt responsibility for Lelia.

She, like Lelia, was careless.

She ignored Noelle's opinion and made a mess of pushing for her to join Loic with her unnecessary meddling. However, she... formed a loving relationship with the kind and prudent Emile.

If we had not come, we would not have been trapped in the face of the coup.

However, Noelle also seemed unhappy with Lelia. So Marie decided to just watch them.

Angie and Livia seemed to feel the same way as Marie too and decided to watch as well.

Lelia started complaining about Noelle for what she had been doing up to now.

- You are the only one who has always been special. You are the only one with the power of the priestess. I was always an extra. You were always in the center. And I was the one who had to put up with it. Do you have any idea how much I've endured? And yet you're always so carefree... It bothers me just to look at you!

She didn't say it in words, but it seems like she always saw Noelle being at the center of the story as the main character.

Marie seemed to be able to understand her. Looking at Livia, she was discussing something with Angie. "Are..." "You can leave it to Leon."

And looking at the twins, Noelle's appearance changed.

- ...When have I always been in the center?"

- What are you saying when it is you with the aptitude of the priestess? It must be great, huh. Someone always helps you. If you have a problem, the boys will be on your side. Even when the Loic thing happened, Leon saved you. It's like you are the main character in the story.

It could not be said that she was the main character of the second of this otome game, so she had to rephrase it to the protagonist of the story.

Noelle shed tears when she heard it.

Then she grabbed Lelia's side ponytail.

- I-It hurts! Let go!

- Don't joke... Don't joke with me !!

Noelle's loud voice hurt Marie's ear, and she covered her ears with her hands. Noelle didn't care about the people around her and took all her frustration out on Lelia.

- Aptitude of the priestess? That? I did not want that! It means nothing to me. You always had what you wanted! You have taken everything from me and now you are playing the victim!

Noelle shook Lelia so hard that she felt weak.

- L-Let go of me.

- You are always like that! You have always been very intelligent and clever, and everyone around you has always loved you. Do you understand how I feel after being compared to you all my life? You never understood my feelings, ever... I've always been your scapegoat!

When Noelle started to get more upset, Marie jumped in and tried to separate them.

—Stop iiiiiitt!!

When she pushed Noelle to the ground, the two parted ways.

Lelia gasped and sat on the floor. Then, little by little, the anger started to rise... she got up and walked over to Noelle.

Noelle also stood up and tried to resume the fight, to which Marie desperately tried to stop her.

- Noelle, calm down!

- Let go! This is something I won't forgive you for. Why does she say that she endured a lot when she was the one who had many things that I did not get? I'm the one who has endured a lot!

When Lelia jumped on Noelle and tried to resume the fight... Louise grabbed Lelia's hand as if to say that she couldn't keep watching anymore.

- It's enough. Enough of being loud. I'm worried about my family, but if you want a sister fight, do it elsewhere.

Lelia, who was told that coldly, looked at Louise with an intense gaze.

- Family, you say? If they hadn't cornered Serge, this would not have happened. You act like you don't care, but you are also responsible.

When Louise narrowed her eyes upon hearing her, she squeezed Lelia's arm.

- So, what do you know? You think Serge didn't do anything to me?

- It was the duty of a family to accept him.

- You are a stranger and you speak lightly about the circumstances of others. Has Serge said something to make you feel better about yourself? You really are stupid for listening to his words.

- Only the bad guys are good on the outside.

- ...Lespinasse family people are annoying. I dislike Noelle, but I hate you.

This time, a fight between Lelia and Louise was about to start.

Marie was about to cry.

I understand how you feel, but don't fight! I feel like my stomach will explode!

Marie was jealous of Leon, who left the room quickly. She was sorry she didn't come out of this room saying that she could help herself.

So... maybe reaching the limit of her patience, Angie unleashed her intimidation.

- It's enough.

Lelia turned around and made a "Haa?" Voice, but when she saw Angie's face, she immediately looked away. If Lelia looked like a bully, Angie looked like a mob boss.

- I don't know and I don't care about the cause of your argument, but now is a critical time for Leon and the others. If you make noise and get in Leon's way, I'll take care of you myself.

Marie could see an illusion of flames on Angie's back. That burning flame rising like a mane seemed to be Angie's temper.

Livia looked at them coldly.

- When this is all over, you can fight all you want. Just shut up for now. Leon and the others are not going to have it easy.

Unlike Angie who looked like water... sometimes calm, sometimes scary. She gave off such an atmosphere. Livia was scarier when angry.

Marie nodded with all her might.

Then Noelle, who was being held, began to cry.

- I also. I also wanted to be loved.

Hearing that voice, Marie looked at Noelle's face.

- Noelle?



The strategy I thought of with Julian and the others was like this.

A fleet with allies led by Einhorn would storm the Sacred Tree Temple!

After that, the armed units will invade from within and take back Yumeria. At that time, I also want to release the six great nobles that may have been captured.

...If they are alive.

Is it possible that there is a 50-50 chance?

Louise was also worried and I wanted Mr. Alberg to be alive.

We will transfer the women to Licorn and they will wait behind.

I can't let them fight or anything like that.

As I returned to the Einhorn Bridge, I noticed that Julian was missing.

- Hey? Did Julian go to the bathroom?

Jilk, who put on a pilot's suit, turned his gaze towards the door.

- He was depressed because he won't be able to go out with us. He was saying he would move to Licorn.

- Did he lose motivation and go loafing in the rear? He still feels like a prince.

- His crown prince status has been stripped, but he is still a prince. Count Baltfault, you should be more aware of His Highness's position.

- Isn't he an idiot who cheated on a woman and abandoned his crown prince status? I recognize him as an idiot, so it's okay.

- ...Were you taught that you must also be careful even with allies on the battlefield?

This bastard, are you going to shoot me in the back?

While saying such nonsense, Luxon looked towards Einhorn's deck.

[Master, Loic is here.]

- Eh?



When I went on deck, I met Loic there.

Loic, who boarded in a small boat, was preparing to fight for some reason.

- Count Baltfault, I want you to let me fight too.

- Isn't Marie in the back of the boat?

- I-Is that so? No, no. I also want to fight with you.

Greg heard his words and for some reason felt very uncomfortable.

He walked over to Loic and grabbed him by the chest.

- This is not a game! You, who cannot use the power of the Sacred Tree, will only be a hindrance!

I was surprised by Greg's threat, but it was certainly tough getting Loic involved. The nobles of the Republic are extremely weak without their emblem. Loic was training, but he is only as good as an ordinary soldier.

To give gifts to the girls in the Kingdom of Holfaul, there is a difference in the ability of us who vomit blood.

Still, Loic didn't back down.

- Even if I'm not useful... I can at least serve as a shield for you!

- Eh?

- I... I was saved by Nee-sama. Also, I am quite familiar with the internal structure of the Sacred Tree temple, so I should be a good convenience for you as well. Please let me help!

Certainly, with Loic the assault inside the temple would be facilitated. Greg turned his gaze to me, so I nodded and he released Loic.

Greg scratched his head and turned his back on him.

- Do what you want. Of course, Marie will be sad if you die, so don't die.

- I thank you all!

They are rivals since they like the same woman. However, Greg told Loic not to die. Is this a luxury a handsome guy can say? I'm jealous and confident that I'll never be able to say the same.

I decided to loan Loic the armed unit Julian used to use.

That would save Loic's life.

- Loic, you can use the spare white unit.

- ...Thanks. Now I can fight too. I was frustrated that you were involved in the rebellion of the Republic and that I could not do anything about it.

It seems that he is thinking of various things in his own way.

When I was impressed, a nostalgic... no, a guy from a long time ago showed up.

- Long time no see, guys!

Upon landing on deck, Julian... No, it wasn't him.

It was a man who called himself the Masked Knight. I met him before when we were at war with the former Principality of Fannoss in the Kingdom of Holfaul.

As usual, he has the suspicious appearance of a cape and mask, and has great guts to carry himself with complete confidence.

Chris drew the sword from his waist and Brad prepared a magical fireball in both hands.

- The masked knight!

- Why is this guy in the Republic !?

The four who were seriously wary pointed their weapons not knowing that he was Julian. Even his foster brother Jilk, who grew up with him from a young age, pointed his gun at the masked knight.

Loic was blinking and didn't understand what was happening.

Luxon asked me to take care of this.

[This charade again? Why don't you tell them who it is?]

- I don't want to get involved. Also, those five guys may be enjoying this charade, right? Better to leave it like that, when you just watch from afar and laugh.

When I think of Marie, who has to take care of these guys who repeat the charade, I feel sorry and at the same time I think "You deserve it!".

At least I hope you entertain me.

The masked gentleman approached me.

- It's been a long time, Count Baltfault.

Hey? Are you talking to me like that all of a sudden?

- Yes.

- I've heard the enemy outnumbers us. I will give you a hand even if it is of little help. I'd like to borrow an armed unit. Do you have the white unit His Highness Julian wears?

He really is a guy who comes at a bad time.

I explained to the masked gentleman that he was displaying a relaxed demeanor as I looked at Loic.

- Oh, impossible. I promised to lend it to Loic just now.

Loic was suspicious of the masked gentleman. Well, it would be difficult to know the true identity of the masked knight with the little relationship between this guy and Julian.

- That's how it is. If you have nothing to do, go home.

- What are you saying!? That's my unit!

- No, isn't it the property of Count Baltfault? And what do you think you do with that strange mask on? Take off your mask and say your name.

Julian was given good reasoning, but he couldn't call himself a masked gentleman if he retired just because of that.

- Can't you see there's a reason why I can't tell you my name? Count Baltfault, that white unit is not suitable for him. Let me ride it!

It was Julian's request, but I must ask Loic to show us the way inside the temple.

In order of priority, there is no way to leave Loic out of this.

- Give up and come to the bridge with me. I'll get you a cup of tea.

- What the hell do you think I came here for? Let me fight!



The place they moved to was the Einhorn hangar.

Jilk was watching Loic open the cockpit hatch and make adjustments to Julian's white armed unit.

- Still, I'm in awe of Count Baltfault. Since with these numbers he is going to wage a war against the Republic.

It was Brad who pointed out Jilk's mistake. He pointed to the enemy and the number.

- The opponent is a rebel army, and in terms of numbers, there are 200 aircraft. We have a good chance of winning.

- Isn't that a difference in strength of more than 6 times?

- The purpose of victory is to save Yumeria? After that, if you escape the republic, they won't be able to chase you. After all, the republic's weapons are for defense only. If you leave their country, they cannot fight.

Because they used the power of the Sacred Tree, they would weaken if they left the republic. It was a statement made with that in mind, but this time Chris disagreed.

- If the opponent also has the same performance as Luxon, I think it would be strange if they didn't have the ability to fight outside their country.

- Guh! Yes, that's true, but Luxon said there were chances of winning. I am sure there is also a secret plan.

- Isn't it better to say you don't know instead of just showing off?

Brad was silent when Chris said that, but this time Greg, who was not satisfied, opened his mouth.

- You two should focus. This time they will be with an enemy who is not to joke.

Ideal, a lost item just like Luxon, was on Serge's side to help him. Greg and the others had experienced Arroganz's power firsthand. So they understood the horror to come.

Then, Leon's voice was heard from Arroganz.

The cockpit hatch was closed and Leon could not be seen.

- You guys rattle and you're very loud! You make noise like children. Shut up for a bit!

Jilk was stunned by Leon's foul-mouthed voice.

- You really are unpleasant.

- Shut up and be my bullet shield.

The words heard from Arroganz made Jilk and the others irritated.

# CHAPTER 8

## TIES BETWEEN PARENT AND CHILD

The Temple of the Sacred Tree.

Serge, sitting on the prepared throne, was frustrated because he did not know where Lelia was.

He knew she was working together with Leon and his team, but her movements were unknown. He had heard of a kingdom airship coming this way, but Luxon had interfered with all communications and Ideal had been unable to obtain solid information.

- I'll fight that bastard and get Lelia back.

Unable to wait and rising from his chair, Ideal approached.

Ever since Serge called him a liar, Ideal has been in a bad mood.

[Einhorn heads towards us with thirty aircraft. Lelia appears to be on board an aircraft of the same type as Einhorn. I have also confirmed Louise's presence.]

- Did it come from the other side? Did he come to get the bastard Alberg back?

[You are wrong. He says he will get Yumeria back. After that, Lelia will board a white airship and move backwards. Be careful when fighting.]

Serge was a little suspicious of Ideal, who provided a lot of detailed information. The most suspicious thing is that he obtained a lot of detailed information about the situation when communications were supposedly jammed. But at the moment, Lelia was more important than Ideal.

- Perfect. I'll settle accounts with the bastard here. I'll show Leon and Louise's corpses to the motherfucking Alberg.

Ideal said a silent goodbye to Serge, who triumphantly left the room with the throne.



When he arrived at the hangar, there were knights, soldiers, adventurers, mercenaries... and rogues waiting for the moment to leave.

Each of them in his right hand had a lower emblem.

Knights, who previously had a lower rank emblem, received a higher rank emblem and were appointed as platoon leaders.

Several had received the emblem of the six great nobles and had been appointed commanders and company captains.

The Revolutionary Armed Forces had been in existence for a short time and their organizational system had not yet been completed.

The emblem delivered by Serge improved the performance of the armed units they rode.

At the same time, the armed units they rode boasted high performance without the emblem.

These were armed units redesigned and prepared by Ideal.

Like Arroganz, these are armed units that cannot be manufactured with the level of technology in this world.

The most sophisticated of them was a quadruped unit in which Serge was traveling, its name was Gia. Standing in front of Gia, Serge inspired his allies to face the enemy on the way.

- A fool has come recklessly to fight us... Leon Fou Baltfault. A kingdom hero who has been taking our hometown by storm, but it's about time he left.

The pilots who obtained his emblem were not afraid when hearing the name of Leon.

They had already been defeated many times, but they now believed in the power of their emblem and their weapons.

They were sure that now they would not lose to Leon.

The same happened with Serge.

He obtained the Gia armed unit that was not inferior to Arroganz and this time he would defeat Leon.

I'm going to beat him to death for humiliating me.

If they both fought with all their might and he lost, it could still be understood that he would not forgive him. However, Leon never treated Serge as an enemy from the beginning.

He had pretended to lose to fool Louise.

After that, the moment Leon got serious, Serge was defeated in one fell swoop.

What can be more humiliating than that?

- Go ahead! Let's show those ignorant bastards in the Kingdom of Holfault what the Republic is capable of!

All the soldiers yelled "Yes!" in chorus and boarded their armed units.

Serge also got into Gia. There was room in the cabin since it was bigger than Arroganz.

When he sat down in his seat and pressed the joystick, the monitor came on and showed the surrounding landscape. The image seen from the monitor was as if it were seen with the naked eye.

All four of Gia's legs slowly rose from the aircraft.

In his right hand he carried a spear and in his left a large shield.

His appearance was similar to that of a centaur, but also that of a mounted knight.

As Gia slowly rose from the ground, the surrounding mass-produced armed units also came out at once.

Hundreds of armed units rose into the sky and formed a formation.

The Ideal-built aircraft were also in formation and ready for attack.

- Yes, come whenever you want. I will make this place your grave.

A vengeful Serge saw the Holfaul Kingdom fleet in the distance and licked his lips with his tongue.

His mood was that of a predator waiting for its prey.

Only about thirty airships would attack the Sacred Tree Temple without any plan. Serge saw it and raised the corner of his mouth.

- Are you attacking like an idiot? The range of the cannons is also extending here! All ships, start firing!

At Serge's voice, the aircraft turrets activated and began targeting Einhorn, who was in the lead.

Instead of the cannons lined up on the sides as they usually are, these were mobile turrets.

Despite the fact that they were not automatic, the aircraft were still quite advanced from the Republic aircraft.

All the guns fired at once, and immediately charged and fired again.

They had an unprecedented rate of fire and impact, and more importantly, their range had been greatly increased.

These were also faster and stronger than previous aircraft.

There would be no sailor who did not trust these aircraft.

Immediately, a projectile struck Einhorn and he was surrounded by the smoke generated from the explosion.

Even so, Serge did not stop the attack.

- Go on. Keep shooting! I don't care if all the bullets run out, hit him with everything!

Serge, whose eyes were red as blood, was touched by the overwhelming power in his hands.

Just imagining Leon and the others being ripped apart made Serge's breath rapid.

But...

- Tsk! So it is not that easy to sink.

...Einhorn, whose bow extended like a horn, seemed to pierce the black smoke. It looked like it had some damage, but it was still standing.

Suddenly, a panicked transmission came from one of his allies.

- Guardian, the enemy is coming!

The quality of the pilots was inexplicably low as there were more amateurs than well-trained soldiers.

- Keep calm. There are more of us here. If they surround him and hit him, he is not an enemy to fear. The enemy will soon begin to deploy its armed units. Intercept them!

He thought that the enemy aircraft would slow down and deploy its armed units.

However, Einhorn kept speed at maximum and the other aircraft plunged into the Revolutionary Army fleet.

- T-They're idiots!

Behind Serge and the others was the Temple of the Sacred Tree.

Inside was also Yumeria, whom Leon and the others were trying to rescue. It was crazy to ram into a place like this.

However, he remembered doing the same when he rescued Louise.

- Are these kingdom boys real idiots when it comes to attacking?

Even Serge was surprised.

He moved Gia out of Einhorn's course and commanded the people around her.

Einhorn advanced as he removed his stunned, immobile armor. Then, even though it

collided with a slowly moving aircraft, it also flew away and hurtled straight towards the Sacred Tree temple like an arrow... and suddenly changed its direction at a right angle along the way.

Unable to kill the momentum, Einhorn struck the ground in front of the Sacred Tree Temple from the side of the helmet and scraped the ground. Upon reaching the Sacred Tree Temple, the hangar hatch opened and armed units appeared.

White, green, blue, red, purple... among the armed units that I had seen before, there was a gray and black unit.

It was Arroganz.

Serge's eyes widened and he took out a syringe from the metal box he brought into the cockpit. This was a body-strengthening drug prepared by Ideal.

This was also a powerful drug that ignored the tension of the body.

- I found you, you son of a biiiiiiiiiiiiitch!!

Thinking that Leon was there, he placed the syringe on his body and injected himself with the drug.

For a moment Serge's eyes went white, but he soon calmed down and returned to normal.

However, he was sweating abnormally and his eyes turned red.

- It works. It is better than the one I used before. This sharp sensation... it's amazing, even if I ignore the pain in the body.

Serge, who used a drug to strengthen his body, headed inside the building to pursue Leon and the others who had sneaked into the Temple of the Sacred Tree.

- You ten, follow me! We will crush those who entered!

As Gia headed for the Sacred Tree Temple, about ten armed units followed behind.

The Revolutionary Army was defending the Temple of the Sacred Tree, but the battle began with the invading Kingdom Army.



Arroganz and the others advanced with Loic in front, who boarded a white armed unit.

- {It's through here!!}

They proceeded by ripping off the defense equipment that had been prepared by Ideal. But at that moment, an enemy armed unit from an aircraft appeared. - {Tsk!}

Loic tried to deal with him, but Greg pushed him from behind.

- {Stay behind. We will take care of it.}

- {W-Wait. I can fight too!}

While Loic, who was pushed back, said he could fight, Greg was piercing the enemy with a spear in the meantime. The pilot was safe, but Greg drew his spear and roughly kicked the enemy armed unit.

- {These guys could be your friends!... You just need to guide us. Don't deal with these guys.}

Goofy Greg was acting with Loic in mind.

Loic then thanked him.

- {... Sorry. But more importantly, if that image is correct, we must continue ahead.} Ahead of them was a large door.

So when Chris opened the door first, a hail of bullets started to go off. - {As I thought, it's an ambush!}

Ideal's automatic defense team was ready and attacked the intruders mercilessly.

Then, Arroganz stepped forward and forcefully destroyed the defense equipment. The method was violent... he reached over, put his hand on it and hit him with a shock wave.

Chris reproached him for his actions.

- {Arroganz, don't get too far ahead!}

Arroganz looked back and answered Chris.

- {I told you we didn't have much time! Move fast!}

Jilk's armed unit held a rifle and fired through defense equipment. - {You really are a headache.}

Brad got into position to guard the entrance.

- {No enemies coming from behind.}

When the defense equipment was destroyed, a part of the Sacred Tree was exposed at the rear of the great room. The entire wall was covered with the Sacred Tree.

Yumeria was sitting in the hollow in the center.

The tree's roots were entwined and it was as if it was trying to absorb her. Yumeria showed no reaction even as the battle unfolded. If Arroganz and the others carelessly approach, it will cause an electric shock.

- {We shouldn't get close, understand?}

Then, coming down from the roof, Ideal appeared, bringing some drones with him.

He expressed his discomfort towards Arroganz and the other invaders.

[Yumeria has a role to play. I can't let you take her away.]

It was Greg who bit into those words.

- {Don't talk so smugly about kidnapping people!}

However... Ideal also expelled his emotions.

[Although it is unforgivable for people to approach the Sacred Tree, they wreak havoc without understanding it. Actually its existence is less than garbage.]

Hearing that, Greg realized Ideal's true nature.

- {Is this how you really are? Luxon is foul-mouthed too, but he's not as rotten as you are.}

[...Luxon. He knew the AI on the immigrant ships was faulty. It helps them and betrays the old humanity. I will use its main body.]

Then Arroganz and the others jumped towards Ideal.

- {You're too loud!}

Ideal sent the drones towards Arronganz and the others, but the roof was destroyed and Gia, the quadruped armor, emerged from it.

- {Found you, son of a bitch!}

He stomped on Arroganz and, just as he was, slammed him to the ground.

Armed units invaded the place one after another after Gia, but the shield protecting Yumeria was probably stopped because the roof was destroyed.

Ideal complained to Serge about that appearance.

[What the hell were you thinking destroying the defense barrier?]

- {Do not get in my way. This guy is my prey!}

Serge, who trampled Arroganz and drenched himself with pleasure, was more belligerent than usual because of the body-strengthening drug. His judgment was less than usual.

Greg and Chris charged to send Gia flying, while Brad and Loic picked up Arroganz and fell back.

Serge's subordinates continued to attack from the sky.

Ideal screamed.

[Do you understand that there is a priestess of the Sacred Tree?]

Serge, who started fighting where Yumeria was, was looking at Arroganz. He thought

he saw Leon there and talked to him.

- {Since you beat me... no, long before that, I can't get your face out of my head. If I don't kill you, I'll never forgive myself. For the love of God, disappear from my life, Leon!}

Gia, a four-legged armed unit, was very mobile and fast. When he closed the distance between himself and Arroganz, he tried to stab him with the spear he had.

Then, Loic hit him with his body.

- {Stop it now, Serge. Is this what you wanted to do? Wasn't it your dream to be an adventurer?}

Serge was enraged when he heard Loic's voice.

- {So you're on his side? So you are also an enemy. I'll tear you apart into mincemeat and show it to your father!}

Apparently, the heads of the six great nobles are still alive.

Jilk raised his rifle and fired at the armed units firing from the sky.

- {I'd rather not fight here. Let's take it outside.}

Brad agreed with Jilk's proposal.

- {Definitely better outside}

Brad's purple unit had a spear-shaped drone on its back, it shot out to engage the other enemy units and drones.

Under attack from the machine gun planted on the spear, the enemy's armed units... deployed a magic circle.

It was the emblem of the six great nobles. They were launching an attack.

- {Is this strength that of his followers !?}

Brad was shocked, but tried to fight everyone and get them out.

Serge was fighting Chris's armed unit, who was holding a sword, and hit him with his shield.

Chris's unit rolled on the ground.

- {Tsk!}

Greg went to confront Serge immediately, but he was losing power.

- {T-This guy has more power than Arroganz !?}

Serge, who is good against the surprised Greg, began to show off with a laugh. There seems to be a margin of power in Gia's overwhelming performance.

- {This is a specially prepared unit to kill Leon! It is obvious that it is very strong!}

Gia, controlled by Serge, was out of control, but then Arroganz started flying and headed outside.

- {Don't run away, coward! I'll bring you in front of my father and older sister... and make her recognize me as a younger brother!}

Confused, Serge spoke of Alberg and Louise as his father and sister. No one had time to point it out or notice it.

When Arroganz went outside, a fierce battle was raging between the kingdom's army and the rebel army.

Before he knew it, Einhorn also emerged and was fighting. When Arroganz looked down, Gia was closing in on him.

- {Don't think you can escape. The Sacred Tree constantly supplies us with energy and poweeeerrrrrrr!}

When Gia kicked Arroganz, it sent him flying. Gia, who was in front of the place where he was blown up, knocked Arroganz to the ground with its shield.

- {And speed too !?}

As Gia approached Arroganz falling to the ground, he tried to drive his spear into the

cockpit. He intended to slam him to the ground and skewer him with a spear.

- {I'm stronger than you! I... I deserve a family more than you!}

Arroganz put his hands in front of him and created a shock wave to push Gia away. Arroganz fell to the ground, but got up quickly.

Gia, who also fell to the ground, was firmly on the ground with all four legs.

- {Hahahahaha!}

The abnormal Serge seems to only have eyes for Arroganz who was in front of him. That is why he did not notice the others coming towards him.

- {Your opponent is us!}

When Greg and Chris approached Gia, they started attacking from left to right.

Gia used her shield to avoid Chris's attacks, but on the other side... the right side, Gia couldn't catch Greg's spear, and the tip of the spear pierced through his chest.

- {Can't you pierce him with this?}

When Greg's lamentable voice was heard, Gia flinched at being attacked from behind.

- {Damn! What a bunch of weak bastards.}

As Serge tried to push Greg and the others away, a spear-shaped drone hovering around him surrounded him and launched a machine gun attack.

Greg and Chris cut him off while he was shocked by the attack.

And aiming at the joint parts... Jilk started firing.

- {I was thinking of fighting Count Baltfault, but can't I get rid of him first? He is very annoying.}

It was a coordination that the five of them were thinking of to counter Leon by riding Arroganz.

It was not a one-on-one match, but a four-on-one match using their numbers. However, even though Gia was having trouble, he still couldn't be knocked down. Chris yelled at Arroganz.

- {Leave it to us and return to save Yumeria!}

Arroganz immediately made his way to the Sacred Tree Temple.

And then Serge screamed when he saw him go.

- {You must be kidding me! Don't run away, Leon! I've been waiting a long time... many years for this moment!}



Arroganz had returned inside the Sacred Tree Temple.

[As I thought, Serge is useless, huh?]

Ideal seemed frustrated to see him, but when Arroganz caught Ideal with his right hand, Ideal was shattered with a shock wave.

And then Arroganz's booth opened.

Who came out of there was not Leon, but Kyle.

- Mom... Mom!

Arroganz put Kyle in his hand and pulled him closer to Yumeria.

Kyle touched Yumeria, Yumeria's eyes were open but looking unconscious. No matter how much he called her, Yumeria didn't answer.

Even so, Kyle kept calling her.

- I'm sorry, I'm so sorry. I-It was my fault. That is why I have come. I don't want you to go, mom. I don't care if we part. But, I don't like that you're not happy. I never thought of wanting to see you this way.

Shedding great tears, he continued to call out to Yumeria.

The reason why Kyle was so cold to Yumeria was because he hid his shame, but also because he wanted Yumeria to be strong.

- I... I want to spend more time with you, Mom. I want to spend more time with you because I will die before you. I won't be able to always stay close to you...

Elves and half-elves. The difference in appearance is indistinguishable, but the main difference is its life span. Half-elves have the same life expectancy as humans.

But sub-races like elves have much longer life than humans. The growth of a half-elf is the same as that of a person.

Although Kyle looks younger now, he will eventually look more like an adult. And he will die before Yumeria.

- You're unreliable but you are kind... I loved that kind of mother, but if I'm not firm, it's easy for them to fool you... that's why I want to be more firm.

And that's why I thought he was right.

Kyle cried and asked for forgiveness, but Yumeria didn't react.

Kyle squeezed her hand like this was all pointless.

- I'm sorry, Mom. I... I really love you. I'm really sorry this happened because I insulted you.

Even if she didn't regain consciousness, he was going to take care of Yumeria.

Extending his hand to help her, Yumeria, who was hanging from the Sacred Tree, raised her face...

...And looked like she was very confused.

- Ah? It is morning already? Oh hi, Kyle... Hey? Kyle, wh-what is it!? Why are you crying so much!? Does something hurt? Y-You know, I'll heal you in no time, just wait a bit. E-huh? I can not move.

Yumeria woke up and did not understand her situation.

Seeing that, Kyle cried and hugged her.





@Colores\_PJ

- I am sorry. I'm really sorry.

He was crying so much that he was no longer understood, but Yumeria smiled gently.

- I'm not sure what you're saying, but I forgave you. After all, I am your mother.

When Yumeria regained consciousness, Arroganz's pairs of eyes flashed once.

Then, with his left hand, he began to remove the branches of the Sacred Tree wrapped around Yumeria.

Arroganz moved without being handled.

When Yumeria was released, Kyle led her straight to the cockpit.

- Mom, this way!

- Are you sure? Won't Master Leon be upset?

- He won't mind! I have his permission, so hurry up and get inside! There are many enemies around...!

When Kyle looked up at the sky, floating there was Serge riding on Gia.

However, he was floating and staring at Kyle and the others.

- {... you're not Leon? And you are mother... and son?}

Kyle started hugging Yumeria while Gia watched them.

That's not good. If he attacks us now, we are dead.

When Gia's right hand moved, Kyle was about to push Yumeria away. He thought she could be saved by putting her in Arroganz's booth.

However, it was Yumeria who moved first.

She pushed Kyle into Arroganz's booth.

"M-Mom!"

Yumeria smiled at the sight of Kyle's face. Kyle held out his hand to Yumeria as Gia's hand moved closer to her.

When I've finally come this far!

In this critical situation, Arroganz detached his container and ejected it. The container hit Gia, and as it did so, the thruster ignited and pushed Gia back.

- {I will never forgive youuuuuuuu!!!!}

Hearing Serge's voice, Kyle rushed to pull Yumeria's hand toward Arroganz's booth.

- Arroganz, we're inside!

Shouting that, Arroganz closed the hatch and flew into the sky. However, Arroganz's flight speed upon losing his container had been significantly reduced.

Gia, who destroyed the container, came over to pierce with her spear aimed at Arroganz. Then Brad lunged.

- { Go! Go to where Baltfault is!}

Brad's shattered unit hugged Gia and got in the way.

Kyle thanked him.

- T-Thank you very much!

Arroganz's destination was Einhorn.

And in the sky of the Sacred Tree Temple, there were no enemy airships.

Perhaps they had destroyed all the armed units, as only one allied aircraft and one armed unit were floating.

On the Einhorn deck was the figure of Leon waiting for Kyle.

# CHAPTER 9

## MASTERMIND

When Arroganz, who was carrying Kyle and Yumeria, landed on the deck, the hatch opened. Coming down from the hatch, Kyle held Yumeria in his arms.

I walked over, put my hand on Kyle's head and patted his head while ruffling his hair. Kyle didn't like that, but he seemed a little happy.

- P-Please stop!

- You did well for your first time. How was your ride in Arroganz?

- I don't think I can bear it. Arroganz is the mount of Count --- Of Master Leon.

When he called me that, it made me think it's like a mind game in which favourability increases.

Yumeria looked very worried.

- M, Master Leon, I'm sorry I took a break from work without permission!

Even if she apologizes for such a thing right now, I'll be in trouble.

- It's okay, just go hide inside the ship. I'll be busy from now on. Luxon, floating beside me, complained with an air of annoyance.

[You made me do something reckless. The success rate would have been higher if you had been in there.]

- He only wanted to help. Come on, do the maintenance quickly.

After seeing Kyle and Yumeria getting into the airship, I boarded Arroganz and closed the hatch.

The unmanned aerial drones, which had been taken out on deck in advance, encircled

Arroganz and began maintenance.

Luxon started compiling Gia's data while doing maintenance.

[The unit Serge is riding appears to be called Gia.]

- Gia? What does it mean?

[It means greed.]

—Uwaa ~ it's very chuuni.

[That's right. More importantly, Gia is an armed unit that Ideal built to counter Arroganz. I'm sure he has been analyzing Arroganz's performance data so far. How troublesome.]

If Ideal becomes the enemy, that's all he can do.

I would do the same thing, if it were me.

But... how bad can it be?

- We have saved Yumeria. From what I heard, Mr. Alberg and the others are safe too, right? We will leave here after rescuing them.

[That's only if they let us get away. Master, Gia is getting closer.]

As the drones moved away from Arroganz, these were replaced by a backpack shaped like wings on the back instead of the container, this was Schwert.

A missile package was placed on the wings and even more armor was placed on Arroganz's armor.

It looks quite stylish this time. Did you put even more armor on?

[It's just an overlay, but this is to increase the winning percentage as much as possible. Use it with care.]

As I took off from the deck, Gia approached Einhorn.

Serge's screaming could be heard, but the other party's face was shown on the monitor screen because they have the same performance as each other.

I saw Serge's face with bloodshot eyes.

I immediately understood what he used when I saw him drool from the edge of his mouth.

- Did you get high again?

- {I'll do anything to kill you! It's been a long time... I've wanted to kill you for over 10 years!}

- Huh?

What the hell are you talking about? Ten years ago we didn't even know each other. With that in mind, Luxon explained Serge's feelings.

[Isn't he overlapping with the Rault family's son, Leon? He was always jealous of his deceased son.]

- It's that kind?

[Master, there is no time to sympathize.]

When Gia approached, I, also grabbed the control stick again.

- Who is going to sympathize?

Gia's spear, which was fast approaching, was caught by a great sword drawn from my back.

Looking at the spear, it appears that it had a weapon installed.

Then Arroganz jerked when Serge fired.

- Ugh!

[Its performance is superior to previous enemies.]

- I should have upgraded Arroganz as well.

While speaking lightly, I took a distance from Gia and launched the missile pack... from there several missiles were launched and attacked Gia.

However, Gia dodged them and destroyed them with the weapon she had installed on her spear.

- Is that valid?

[Ideal is supporting him. I could do the same, and I've done it before, right?]

—It's annoying that someone else can. Well, what shall we do?

Facing the armed unit created to counter Arroganz, I thought about how to fight.



Arroganz and Gia were fighting fiercely.

Armed units from the Kingdom landed on the aircraft one after another and were resupplied and repaired.

And then...

- Dad!

- Louise!

...The heads of the six great nobles that Loic had saved had arrived on Licorn.

When Louise met Alberg, she hugged him on the deck. Alberg was also happy and hugged tightly that her daughter was alive.

On the other hand, Lelia was the one who was observing such a situation.

- Marvelous. The bad guys are hugging each other.

For Lelia, the Rault family were the bad guys. Alberg, who became the final boss of the second game of this otome game, took revenge because his mother had abandoned

her engagement to him in the past.

What a regrettable reason... What a regrettable man.

And the daughter of such a man was the villain who bullied the main character.

Seeing these two hugging, Lelia began to wonder if her perception was wrong. She began to think like this, but did not dare to change her mind.

The heads of the six great nobles looked coldly at Lambert, the head of the Faiviel family. The person in question bent down and held his head.

- Give it back to me. Give me back my emblem. That is the symbol of the Faiviel family. You can't take it off.

He kept saying the same thing over and over while crying.

Fernand also looked visibly ill. Before he used to look like a blue-eyed blond nobleman, but now he seems to have a full beard with his hair all messy. There were shadows under his eyes and it looked like he had barely slept.

It seems that he was mentally shocked to lose the protection of the Sacred Tree. His appearance seemed smaller than before.

And then when his eyes turned to Alberg, who was hugging Louise, he was filled with hatred.

- Acting President... this is your fault. We lost our emblems because you weren't watching Serge. It's your fault!

Fernand's eyes seemed so bloodshot that even Lelia freaked out.

The same happened with the other heads of the family.

They stared at Alberg, as if the Rault family were responsible.

Loic's father, Bellange, got up and grabbed Alberg.

- The republic is finished because of you. You were the one who adopted Serge and destroyed the Lespinasse family. Furthermore, all of this wouldn't have happened if

you hadn't abandoned the previous priestess!

Alberg let Louise get behind his back and then hit Bellange once. In a hurry, Loic pushed Bellange aside.

- What are you doing, father !?

- Shut up! There is no reason to be called a father by a son without his emblem!

- ...If that's the case, you don't have your emblem either.

When Loic told him that he had also lost his emblem, Bellange realized with a snort and collapsed on the spot.

The emblem was also a great spiritual support for the nobles of the republic. Lelia averted her gaze from the pitiful appearance of the adults who lost him.

Are all these people who were so intimidating now like this, why did they lose their emblem?

The adults and even Fernand, a secret capture character, looked awfully small just because their emblem was missing.

Only Alberg looked imposing, but to Lelia, who had a perception of him as being a scoundrel, she couldn't help but think that he was planning something.



Lelia and the others moved inside the Licorn facility, but the only representative of the republic who asked what would happen next was Alberg.

They met in a room that looked like a meeting room.

Near Lelia were Emile... and Clement, who had a sharp look at Alberg.

Noelle, who had a fight with Lelia, was in a remote part.

And Loic was leaning his back against the wall in a position away from Noelle.

Similarly, Marie and Cara were silent as if they were part of the walls. Alberg sat in a

chair with Louise accompanying him by his side.

Angie, who is the acting captain of Licorn, was talking to Alberg. They spoke of the coup and the participation of the Holy Kingdom Rachelle in supporting said coup.

- The kingdom has helped us again. At this rate we will remain indebted to you.
- Tell that to Leon.
- It's true. I will take care of it.

And then, when there was a pause in the conversation, Angie apologized to Alberg.

- Acting President, as for your son, I cannot guarantee his safety.

When she told Alberg and Louise to give up on Serge, who was fighting Leon, they nodded, although they felt a bit sad.

- I understand. I'm not going to be so cheeky as to ask you to save that boy's life too.

Lelia could no longer take the comments from Alberg, who made a statement to abandon Serge.

- What do you mean by that? Are you saying it's okay for him to die because he's adopted?

Alberg closed his eyes and said nothing at Lelia's words, but then Angie shifted her gaze to Lelia.

- If you're not going to be quiet, go. I don't have time for your grudges.
- This guy was the one who destroyed my house!
- If so, then discuss it with him later. We don't have time for that.

Lelia got mad at Angie, who prioritized herself.

Then Alberg turned to Lelia.

"You must be Lelia, right?"

- That's how it is.

When she responded in an unfriendly way, Alberg began to speak in a soft tone of voice.

- Your anger is justifiable. And I'm not going to blame you for it. You can be resentful of me.

- Are you planning to bring it back?

Alberg's attitude struck a chord with Lelia.

Lelia was about to curse him, but Noelle appeared in front of Alberg. Alberg was ready to take any hit, but Noelle didn't touch him.

Instead, she asked Alberg for the truth.

- Please answer. Why did you destroy the Lespinasse family?

Louise tried to stop Noelle.

- What will you do listening to that story now? Look at the situation... Father?

Louise tried to get Noelle to back off her question, but Alberg stopped her.

Alberg brought his eyes to Noelle and Lelia.

- It's simple to listen to. But... when you hear it, it will hurt, is it still okay?

Noelle nodded a little. She had a determined face.

However, it was different for Lelia.

- I agree. Tell us your excuses. If it wasn't a grudge that our mother abandoned her commitment to you, I'll at least listen to your story.

What is going to be painful? What kind of excuse is a vengeful man going to make who destroyed the Lespinasse family just because they broke off their engagement?

Lelia, who had the knowledge of the second otome game, intended to know everything.

The bad guys were the Rault family and the Lespinasse family were the victims. No matter what excuse Alberg gave, Lelia wasn't going to be swayed. In fact, if he made a strange excuse, she was going to point it out to him.

But when Lelia heard Alberg's story... her perception changed.

- Her mother and I decided to get engaged when we were at the academy. There were a few other candidates at the time, but his mother chose me.

The story began with the meeting between Alberg and his mother.

- At the time, I was concerned about the future of the Alzer Republic. The republic was undefeated by the power of the Sacred Tree, and the economy flourished thanks to the export of magic stones. I would not say that we had no complaints, but it is true that we were better than other countries. However, due to this, corruption was notorious, especially among the top six nobles. The nobles became arrogant, and people like Pierre...

Pierre... The second son of the Faiviel family, a man who wreaked havoc with the emblem of the six great nobles. Those actions were also a crime, but they had been overlooked because he was one of the six great nobles.

A man who used the power of the Sacred Tree to act arrogantly, as an example of noble evil... was beaten to perfection by Leon.

- I felt that the future of the republic, which depends on the emblem and magic stone exports, was in jeopardy. So I felt that a reform was needed. Your mother agreed with my idea.

When you started listening to all this, you would wonder why it didn't work.

After all, the two were never married.

- But, what was most worrying... was the Sacred Tree itself. It is said that the priestess is the one who controls the Sacred Tree, but it is the opposite. The priestess and also the six great nobles are controlled by the Sacred Tree. We are only tools for the Sacred Tree.

It seemed that they were using the power of the Sacred Tree, but they were actually in a position to be used by the Sacred Tree.

The Sacred Tree caused humans to receive its emblem as a blessing that protected them. And the priestess was nothing more than a bridge to those human beings.

Lelia was surprised to hear that.

- Don't say something selfish.

Wait, I don't know about that.

Alberg said it was true and continued.

- That's what your mother said. They can certainly choose a guardian, but the candidates are chosen by the Sacred Tree. From the perspective of the Sacred Tree, it wants to give a strong emblem to the strong being that protects you. The priestess can choose her favorite companion among the candidates, but on the other hand, the options are limited.

Marie was concerned when she saw Noelle's face, but did not speak to her.

Noelle gave a little laugh.

- Nor can that legend be trusted. It was a lie that would end the man I love.

- ...It will be difficult if there is no one you like among those candidates. She and I were talking about the future of the republic. As far as I could tell, it wasn't a bad relationship. But then, your father appeared.

Noelle and Lelia's father was a commoner.

Although he was an excellent student in the academy, he did not have an emblem due to not being a noble.

Such a man was going to be attached to their mother.

- ...I learned later that your father was dissatisfied with the noble policy of the republic. Coincidentally, he tried to change the situation in which she was being used by the Sacred Tree. Perhaps it was inevitable that he got along with your mother, who was worried about being controlled by the Sacred Tree.

Lelia and Clement were surprised to learn that Lelia's father was trying to use the

Sacred Tree.

Clement was puzzled.

- It's a lie that the guardian was thinking about that. As a guardian, he swore to protect the Sacred Tree.

At Clement's words, Alberg spoke with a bitter face as if he remembered Lelia and Noelle's father.

- You can say what you want. He was a cunning man. He was pretending to be a sincere man around her to fool people. He was a good man... and maybe because he was so good, he couldn't forgive those nobles who placed themselves above the people just because they had their emblems.

Lelia reminded her parents that they loved her after her reincarnation. Her parents from her previous life only loved Lelia's sister and neglected her with contempt.

However, she certainly felt that her parents from this world loved her.

That's why she didn't want to believe Alberg's story.

- You lie! You're resentful because he stole your fiancée!

- I am resentful. If she chose him, I would choose to retire and the surroundings would regard me as the pitiful man who lost to a commoner. Do you think I could bear to bless them? But she and that man also betrayed the Sacred Tree... and were abandoned by the Sacred Tree.

- Huh?

- Her father is the man who was trying to use the Sacred Tree. Do you think the Sacred Tree would judge such a man to be worthy of being the guardian? Even without my grudge, he is the man who destroyed the republic system... He had said as much. He wondered if she had chosen me of her own free will or by the decision to be manipulated by the Sacred Tree. He was happy that she was easy to persuade.

Did her mother choose Alberg because the Sacred Tree interfered with their spirits? It seems that he thought so.

The two parents advised that "the guardian should be selected from among the candidates" in a way that pierces the heart.

Lelia, who remembered her kind father, could not accept it and shook her head.

- You're lying, that's a lie!

However... only Noelle accepted the story about her father.

- I had that feeling too.

Lelia yelled at Noelle, who was laughing slightly.

- You, how can you believe that story ?! How can you say such a thing when they loved you so much ?!

You are more loved than I am, and I cannot forgive you for swallowing the Alberg argument!

Then Noelle looked at Lelia coldly.

- ...You are very lucky. I really envy you.

- What did you say?

When the sisters were about to fight again, Clement intervened and stopped them.

Alberg told the two of them what the Lespinasse family had done.

- The Sacred Tree naturally abandoned the Lespinasse family who betrayed it, but your parents pretended to be the priestess and the guardian, and deceived us. They hid the absence of the priestess's and the guardian's crests.

When she chose her father, his mother was abandoned by the Sacred Tree and lost her priestess symbol.

And obviously the guardian emblem was not delivered.

- By the time we realized the facts, his father was researching how to use the Sacred Tree. Did you see the necklace that Loic used? That's one of the Lespinasse family

relics. Losing the emblem, and seeking a power to replace it, the Lespinasse family resorted to such taboos.

Taboos... as tools to unite people and contracts using the Sacred Tree like Pierre who stole Einhorn. Both unjustly bind people and control them.

Everyone in this place noticed the ulterior motives of the Lespinasse family.

When their gazes fell on Loic, he apologized.

Previously, he used a special necklace to prevent Noelle from escaping.

It was a necklace that could not be removed and that would be tied with an invisible chain.

Her father was developing such a tool... judging by the way he used it, he probably intended to manipulate people. Lelia clutched her head.

- That is an absolute lie.

- Unfortunately, it is true. Evidence was found in the Lespinasse mansion.

If left unchecked, the Lespinasse family could end up using the Sacred Tree as a control tool. The six great nobles of that time would have harbored such fears.

The other six families could not have forgiven the Lespinasse family not only for betraying them, but for trying to control them.

Louise became convinced when she learned why the Lespinasse family was destroyed. And then, she directed her anger towards Noelle and Lelia.

- If you have the emblem of the priestess and the guardian, you cannot lose to the Rault family. I wonder if the other bosses knew it too... Also, it's a really silly story to bring up an engagement story to your little brother without an emblem. I was glad that my brother could be the guardian, but it was all a lie.

In the past, there had been an engagement story between Noelle and Leon from the Rault family. However, if this story is true, the Lion of the Rault family could not become the guardian even if he married the Lespinasse family.

Alberg spoke of the situation at the time.

- Perhaps the Lespinasse family was cornered as well. Maybe they wanted to involve the Rault family and force them to collaborate.

Why did the Lespinasse family lose, even though they had the priestess and the guardian?

Why was Alberg the acting president?

While everything connected, Lelia held her head.

- W-what the f... Why did it come to this? This... I don't know.

I didn't see such a story in the game! That is not fair. Why doesn't it go according to the scenario?

Alberg apologized to the two while Lelia couldn't keep up with the situation.

- ...The six families, excluding the Lespinasse family, decided to get rid of them." The head of the families at the time and his predecessors decided to keep it a secret because they couldn't let such a story leak out. You were supposed to disappear with your parents.

However, Alberg decided to save the twin sisters as they were unable to be the priestess.

- We were originally supposed to let you seek asylum. That's why... the vassals of the Lespinasse family kept them in the republic.

Alberg's stern gaze pierced Clement.

Ten years had passed and those who knew the secret of that time had begun to withdraw.

Hesitating to kill the two even more now, Alberg intended not to interfere.

Noelle, who heard everything, looked down and laughed.

- I thought it was suspicious, but I didn't want to believe it. I was sure there was a

reason.

Seeing Noelle cry, Lelia started grinding her teeth.

Did you realize everything from the beginning? And you didn't tell me?... This is how you made fun of me for not knowing what was happening.

She hated Noelle, whom her parents loved more than her. Her older sister's appearance overlapped with her and her hatred increased.

Then Marie approached Noelle.

- Marie?

- It's not your fault, Noelle. Isn't that right old... Alberg-sama?

Alberg nodded.

- You were small at the time and you weren't involved in what was happening. But, I also understand your resentment towards me.

Noelle shook her head.

- I'm not resentful of you. From the beginning, my parents were the ones who betrayed me and did something unforgivable in the first place.

Lelia couldn't understand Noelle and Alberg's reconciliation.

Even though our parents loved her very much and she had the aptitude to be the priestess... life is really unfair. The people around her love her because she is the main character, and even though I am her twin, I am just an extra.

Lelia didn't even realize the contradiction with her own memories, which made her resentment grow even more.



The sky near the Temple of the Sacred Tree.

While I was being chased by Gia, I checked Serge's movements as he fled.

- He's very powerful. But, there are no patterns of behavior.

Luxon, agreeing, explained Serge's lack of behavior patterns and how to deal with it.

[Operator skill does not keep up with aircraft performance. It is the same pattern as the Master, but the Master's operator skill is higher.]

- That is because the men of the realm desperately train to impress a woman.

[The reason you became strong is pathetic, very much like you, Master.]

- All men in the kingdom are like that!

[...It's only part of it. From the baron family to the viscount family of the ruling class. Except for Master, we have a peaceful relationship between men and women.]

I really spent my days vomiting blood.

If I despised it because it was a school discipline, I expected to train as a military man.

I will never forget those hard and painful days. There was a time where my friends and I risked our lives to challenge a dungeon in order to earn money for gifts from the girls.

Serge, who used to imitate an adventurer for fun, had a lot to learn from my point of view.

Gia, approaching, drew an optical weapon from her shield.

This was a locator laser with a tracking function, but Arroganz also fired a laser from his backpack in response.

When I was reincarnated, I never thought that I would fight with optical weapons.

- The way of this world is too different.

As I spoke lightly, Serge's appearance changed.

Serge, shown on the monitor, didn't seem to like the fact that he can't beat me.

- {I will definitely kill you.}

Pulling out a gray metal box, he grabbed a syringe and injected it.

- Do you really want to win?

Serge was foaming from the edge of his mouth at the monitor and regained his composure by wiping with his hand. All the blood vessels in his body could be seen.

Then Luxon began to warn him.

[You should stop using that body-strengthening drug. This places a great burden on the user's body.]

But Serge rejected Luxon's advice.

- {That doesn't matter if I can kill you, Leon. I've always... hated you.}

- You're wrong. I am not the Lion of the Rault family.

Gia flew through the sky like a quadruped, but flew faster than Arroganz. The spear attack was sharp, and Arroganz's extra armor was already wearing off.

Then Luxon spoke to me.

[Master, Serge has already lost his sanity.]

Serge revealed his feelings, perhaps due to the drug.

- {I don't give a shit if you're not real! I can't be part of the family if I don't kill you. I am not loved!}

- You are not loved?

While barely avoiding Gia's attacks, I made a series of quick directional changes in the air and attacked with Arroganz in quick succession.

It felt like he was dealing with various armed units, but this should put a lot of stress on Serge's body.

It seemed like the drug was working, but I know that no pain was felt through the monitor.

Serge started vomiting blood from his mouth.

- {You are the reason why I am not loved! Louise doesn't love me either. And the same goes for Alberg! And my mother also cares only about you. I've always... wanted to be loved!}

Serge, who was adopted, was saying that he had always wanted to be loved. Hearing that, I asked Serge.

- Looks like you were doing something they really hated?

- {I forgive them for being family! What I can't forgive is why they don't love me!}

Gia moved directly over Arroganz and prepared an optical weapon shaped like a lightsaber from the soles of its four legs.

He tried to skewer Arroganz, so I cut off one leg as I moved past him. I could hear Serge scream.

- {If they loved me, I would have accepted everything! Why am I not loved? Only you are loved... I..... I....!}

Did you try to prove that they loved you?

Did Serge keep rebelling because he wanted to realize that he was loved? I sympathize with him, but I really wanted to hear him.

- {You... that, do you love her?}

- What are you saying?

Serge's driving was abrupt. In other words, he couldn't take full advantage of Gia's actions.

When I saw Gia who couldn't give her best performance, I realized that Serge wasn't serious.

He became an adventurer probably due to his rebellion against his parents. He seems to have succeeded because he was talented, but he wasn't seriously aiming for that. For that reason he was weak.

- {I'm crying out for love, but I'm asking you if you love your family.}

Gia's movement visibly slowed. I didn't miss the chance, and while I was able to hit him, I brandished a great sword to hit him with all my might and cut off Gia's right arm.

- Love is good, isn't it? I want it too. Family love is wonderful too... But did you love her? You rejected Alberg's hand and burned your sister Louise's treasure. Is that love?

- {What do you know about me when you have everything !?}

- You are too cheeky to expect others to understand you. You understand me, right? You're looking at me as the Lion of the Rault family, but I'm a different person. You don't even know my circumstances, give me a break with your resentment.

Serge certainly has something to sympathize with, but..... and? I just feel like that. It has nothing to do with me, I really want you to forgive me for bothering him.

I am not wrong. I was just involved!

- Do you want me to understand you? Even if you say you don't even try to understand your family, let alone others, I'm like "Eh?" Did you think about Louise's feelings when you burned the memories with her deceased younger brother? It was a story from when they were kids, but apologize once at least.

This is too complicated.

It was not Alberg who pushed him away, but Serge himself. If so, couldn't they become a family?

- Do you know this saying? Nurture your love. It is your mistake to ask for results before nurturing.

- {You think I didn't do anything ?!}

- I don't know, I have nothing to do with it so don't ask me.

- {Me...! I also.....! Kh!}

Serge's words did not follow. I guess he couldn't continue.

- Hey? Did you realize that you weren't doing anything? How can you ask for love and do nothing? Isn't it horrible to want to be loved, but not love others?

- {Shut up!}

Gia held up her shield and slammed into his body, causing Arroganz to swing his great sword down.

Doing a Karatake wari (Kenjutsu technique to make a descending slash from an overhead stance)... The great sword sliced through Gia's shield and destroyed its left arm.

Gia lost its posture in midair and crashed to the ground.

- You were the one who shook the hand that was extended to you. You had such a good family that I wonder why you didn't accept them.

- {Y-You... you have... no idea.}

Serge was suffering from the impact of the crash, but this unit Ideal had provided him was sturdy and well made. Gia kept moving.

I landed Arroganz on the ground and walked over to Gia.

- Like I said, I don't know anything about you. Do you know anything about me? Even though you don't even know about your family, it's ironic that you want to be loved by being this conceited. It's too annoying even if you also provoked a coup.

- {They are the ones who abandoned me!}

- You mean the disinheritance? You are stupid ~. Ever since you dropped your obligations and dedicated yourself to being an adventurer all the time, Mr. Alberg has tried to release you from your obligations as an heir, saying that if you want to be an adventurer, that's fine then.

- {... W-What? I didn't hear anything about... \* cough \*}

Serge coughed and spat blood.

...You relied too much on drugs.

- You reap what you sow.

While I spoke eloquently, in the cabin Luxon moved his lens to both sides as if he had a headache.

[You are unpleasant, Master. Do you say so much to Serge? Don't you have a human heart?]

- Obviously I do, and it obviously hurts! But, this guy should have noticed earlier.

He was loved, but did not realize it... That was really the story.

- It was his mistake in being duped by Ideal.

Before the coup, Serge may have been well received by the Rault family. However, it is now too late after all this fuss.

Although Gia stood up, Serge was already at his limit.

It was unlikely that Serge could fight properly.

- This is the last thing I'll tell you. It's an important story, so don't miss it.

There was something he could say to Serge.

But... before saying it, a strong light erupted in the sky.

- What the heck??

[There was a problem in Licorn.]

And Serge on the monitor began to suffer more than ever.

The images in Gia's booth showed some raw meat and not a machine. It swelled through the gaps in the machine just like Gia's appearance.

Black liquid overflowed between the gaps and enveloped Gia.

Serge yelled.

- {I-I don't understand, Ideal. You lied to me. You cheated on me, Ideal!}

# CHAPTER 10

## THE MOST DANGEROUS MAN

It was shortly before Leon and Serge ended their fight.

The main people aboard Licorn watched the battlefield from the bridge. The conversation between Leon and Serge, who were fighting, was broadcast, and Alberg, who overheard it, held his face with his right hand.

- ...Serge, did you want to be loved? Was the way I treated you bad?

Alberg seems to regret it, but Louise's reaction was the opposite.

- How did he want to be loved? So did you think that you would be forgiven for being able to do anything? He's a really nasty guy.

While each of them displayed a different attitude, Marie looked at the masked knight on the bridge.

In fact, the masked knight was in command of the fleet that Leon had assembled.

- The battle is over, isn't it?

- Bella lady, unfortunately this is the only place that has come to an end. Besides the Holy Kingdom of Rachelle, I am not aware of the movement of the remaining rebels. In addition, there are still some important figures.

Important figures... he was referring to Ideal.

Ideal had been working behind the scenes manufacturing multiple attack units, but now his whereabouts were unclear.

The masked knight was also cautious because he did not know what he was thinking.

- But we have Luxon here, so we're safe, right?

- I hope so.

Julian became the masked knight because he seriously thought his identity would be unknown. However, Marie knew his true identity.

He noticed, but wondered if he should be more careful.

When Marie looked to her side, she saw Kyle, who had saved Yumeria. Mother and son were here, watching the battle of Leon.

And Livia sighed a little relieved.

- ...It's over, isn't it?

On the monitor prepared for Licorn, Arroganz approached the motionless Gia with his great sword.

Angie was happy about Leon's win, but she still wants to complain to him about his bad speech.

- Isn't that idiot capable of winning in a smarter way? If he kept quiet, he would be a man worthy of being a hero.

After hearing Angie's high praise for Lion, Marie was drawn inward.

I don't think he looks like a hero even with his mouth shut. Even so, my brother is still terrible. Did he plan to say a few final words to him before finishing it?

What was the last thing Leon wanted to say? Marie was worried about that, but a person appeared who began to cry, and directed her gaze towards her.

...It was Lelia.

- Stop! Stop now! Don't kill Serge! You don't have to go that far, do you? Hey, please stop him!

Lelia looked at Alberg with hostile sentiment.

But Alberg thought it would be better to end up here.

- It would be better to end it here. Both for the country and for Serge.

Lelia shook her head in disbelief.

- How can you say that? He just wanted to be loved! You really didn't love him, did you? That's why you can say those horrible things without hesitation!

Lelia started crying, but then Noelle came over and slapped her.

When Lelia was shocked and stopped crying, Noelle explained the situation to her instead of Alberg.

- Do you really think you can help Serge after all this? Can't you imagine what would happen to him if they found him? If you don't get this over with soon... he will continue to suffer.

It is not a peaceful modern story.

It was difficult for Lelia to understand.

Yet Marie knew. Once she was about to be crucified to replace the Saint.

Somehow, there are some parts that are the same as the previous life, so misunderstandings will happen. Although this world is quite radical, I thought too lightly of the peaceful life I had before this one.

It is a world that, unlike her previous life, was less aware of human rights.

If this didn't end here, Serge would be in for hell.

Lelia, who couldn't understand it, clung to Noelle.

- I won't let them do that! Please save him. You can save him, right? Isn't he amazing in his hometown? Please ask Leon to save him!

When Noelle turned around, Lelia turned to Angie.

However, Angie did not accept such an offer.

- Don't put one more burden on Leon. Sorry, but ending it here is the most humane

thing we can do.

- ...And what about you? Won't you help me? If you ask him, Leon would do anything for you, right?

Lelia turned to Livia, who had been silent until now.

Marie, a reincarnated person just like her, quickly realized that she was trying to take advantage of Livia, a somewhat soft person.

However, Livia, who had gained several experiences, was not kind.

- I can't bother Leon with my selfishness, there's nothing I can do.

When he told her crudely that he couldn't help her, Lelia lowered her head.

- Why?... please help me.

When Clement approached Lelia, who was shedding big tears, he tried to calm her down from showing an unpleasant scene.

- Don't look, Miss Lelia. Let's move away from here.

- No! I do not want to!

Lelia got up and made a statement to protect Serge.

- He is like me. He just wanted to be loved! I know exactly how it feels. Because I wasn't loved either!

Lelia said she understood Serge's feelings, but Clement was puzzled.

- No, your parents loved you deeply, Miss Lelia.

- When? They only worshiped my sister because she had the skills to be the priestess. I was excluded and my sister along with them used to talk a lot! I... was my sister's runner up.

She said she was less loved than Noelle.

Noelle grabbed Lelia, who was crying in tears.

- That's enough.

- Let go of me! You have no idea what it's like not to be loved!

- They didn't love you? You have no right to say ---

Marie tried to stop them.

They started fighting again. These girls shouldn't be together... Eh?

The moment Marie started moving to stop them, what she saw was a man with a gun.

- Noe...

It was Clement who moved before Marie could scream.

- Mistress!...!?

Pushing them away, Clement stepped in front of the man and crossed his arms. Without hesitation, the man pulled the trigger against Clement.

Although a slight "puff" from a small pistol was heard only a few times, the bullets easily pierced Clement's well-trained muscle and blew him away.

When Clement's blood splattered the bridge, the surroundings were surrounded by silence.

Noelle and Lelia couldn't understand what had happened, and they were shocked and unable to move.

Louise's eyes wavered as she looked at the man who had shot him.

- W-Why did you do it?" Why did you shoot, Emile?

The one holding the gun was Emile.

Emile's pistol was different... its shape was different from ordinary ones and especially in its power.

With Emile holding the weapon, the light in Clement's eyes disappeared. Then, he silently pointed the barrel at Lelia.





@Coloreos RJ

Dismayed by actions that no one had imagined, everyone was slow to react.

- Goodbye.

Emile's target was Lelia. Noelle, who noticed it, moved quickly and pushed Lelia away.

- Get down!

- Hey?

Lelia, who had been pushed aside by Noelle, did not understand what was happening.

Emile pulled the trigger many times and there were slight "puff" sounds. In a panic, Alberg jumped on Emile, pinned him to the ground, and took the gun from him.

Emile was curtailed, but was looking at Lelia blankly.

Lelia was safe. She was pushed away and fell to the ground.

- N-Nee-san?

A trembling Lelia called out to Noelle, who stood in front of her and showed her back. Noelle stared back at her, but she was bleeding from the edge of her mouth.

- You really are an idiot. You and Serge... are very alike.

Blood slowly trickled down Noelle's back.

...It wasn't in one place. She had been shot in several places, blood spilling and scattering on the ground.

As she was, Noelle collapsed on the ground.

- Noelle!

Marie ran to Noelle and confirmed the injuries, was it a very powerful gun or she was in a terrible state.

Marie immediately used her healing magic, but upon checking the wound, she noticed right away.

T-This is not good. It will not survive.

Blood was pouring from her face.

Marie burst into tears when she saw a large amount of blood flowing from Noelle.

- Hold on, Noelle. If you hold on a little longer, my onii-chan will come. Leon will definitely help you.

She continued talking to her, but Noelle was laughing painfully.

- Y-yes. I want to see Leon... for the last time.

- It is not the last time!

Then Angie raised her voice.

- I'll inform Leon. Luxon should be able to do something about it!

Livia went to Marie, who used magic on Noelle, to help her with healing magic. But her face was surprised... and, with regret, she looked away only once.

So, Marie asked Livia.

- You can do something about it, right?" You are much better than me, right? Healing magic is your specialty, right!?

She saw a hope in Livia, who was a better healing mage than her, but shook her head.

- I'll buy some time. Now that I don't have Are, I have to trust Luc.

Kyle and Cara were tending to Clement as the noise and murmur inside the bridge began to increase.

- T-This way looks good!

- Miss Marie, please take care of Noelle.

Julian, who was wearing a mask, took Emile's gun and walked over to him. "What the hell do you think you've done !?

No one thought that Emile would target Lelia.

Emile, who was caught, remained expressionless. He only moved his eyes to look at the lying Noelle.

- She got in the way. In reality, I was going to kill Lelia.

Lelia, who was told that she would be killed, looked at Emile with a horrified face.

- Emile?

Emile began to speak clearly.

- I thought you would choose me, but I knew Serge was better for you. Lelia, I loved you.

- You're wrong. I don't want to help Serge like that!

- I'm not wrong. After all, I've been watching you.

Emile's cold, chilling voice was not that of a frail, kind young man.

Emile slowly lifted Alberg, who was holding him down.

- What kind of power is this !?

With his slim body, he lifted Alberg with just his strength.

The scene was strange, and it looked like Emile wasn't human.

- I've been watching all ~ this time. You're worried about Serge. You might have thought it was slip-proof, but you were always the best for me... And yet you betrayed me!

When Emile exploded his emotions, the bridge window in Licorn smashed. What appeared from there was... Ideal.

[I have come for you, Young Emile.]

- Thanks, Ideal. But more importantly, Serge failed, didn't he?

[He was never meant to be a king. But it seems that we should switch to Plan E. Young Emile... Are you ready?]

- Yes, that's fine. I'll take Lelia as she is.

Loic and the Masked Knight got in the way when Emile extended his right hand towards Lelia.

- Do you think I'll let you !?

- I won't let you do what you want!

However, Emile's arm transformed into the roots of a plant and he pushed them away as if he were brandishing a whip. The two of them let out a pathetic voice.

- Guaaa!

- Guheh!

When the two of them fell, Emile turned to Lelia.

- Well, does it matter if they're dead or alive? Come on, Lelia.

The roots of the tree came closer to Lelia. Lelia fell into a sitting position and tried to pull away.

- No, stay away! Stay away, monster!

When Emile heard that, he smiled weakly and darkly.

- It's okay, Lelia... As of right now, you will be part of that monster!

When the tree's roots tried to get entangled in Lelia, flames appeared to interfere.

- Tsk!

Emile clicked his tongue and turned his head to look at Angie. Flames were appearing around her. Angie, who manipulates the flames, launched an attack on Emile.

- You've made a fuss at your whim. I won't let you do anything else!

When the flames hit Emile, Ideal deployed a barrier to protect him. Emile's skin color disappeared and turned white, and the color of his eyes turned red.

[There are many obstacles. Shall we merge first?]

- Yes, I know. It's okay to be one with Lelia later. Lelia... we'll see you then.

As Emile smiled, Ideal fired a flash of light that took the vision of everyone present.

When Marie opened her eyes, Emile and Ideal were nowhere to be seen.

Marie instructed the others to inform Leon immediately.

- Call Leon immediately! Don't forget to tell him that Noelle is in danger!

However, Louise was pointing at the monitor.

- W-Wait. Why does it keep moving? And the way it looks...

All eyes turned to the monitor, where black liquid was pouring out of Gia. And then, Gia was swallowed.

The appearance gradually changed... a hideous thing had been born.



- {Ideaaaaaaaaaaaal !!}

Gia's figure was engulfed in black liquid and then turned into a hunk of meat. Something like blood vessels floated to the surface smoothly and was throbbing.

Several small, thin hands appeared, and there was even something that looked like a face. A voice that sounded like Serge's kept calling out Ideal's name.

- Hey, that face, don't tell me that...

[...It's the same Serge. Ideal appears to have put a piece of the magical armor that he said he had destroyed on Gia. It really did. Yes, it has been a long time since someone besides you, Master, has made fun of me.]

- This is no time to joke! Can you save him?!

[Were you going to save him?]

- ...Pretend you I didn't say that.

I asked him if he could help him, but given what Serge did he would be executed even if he hadn't been fooled by Ideal.

- {Someone! Shomehbohdy hehlp mehph... }

When the pained expression disappeared from Serge's face that appeared on the surface, bright red eyes emerged afterwards.

Luxon warned me.

[Master, it's dangerous!]

- I know!

[No, it's not just the magic armor in front of you... it's also the Sacred Tree.]

- Eh?

While I was flying Arroganz into the sky, I looked at the Sacred Tree and Luxon enlarged the image. The one who was in that place...

- Why is Emile merging with the Sacred Tree ?!

[I have contacted Licorn. Master, it appears that Emile was working with Ideal.]

- ...Enough is enough. My stomach can't take anymore!!

As I looked down, I saw the magical armor resembling a piece of meat approaching me with blades of ice appearing around it.

He approached Arroganz while releasing an ice blade.

Maybe this also has a tracking function, even if we ran it will chase us. There were hundreds of them.

- Intercept them!

[Understood.]

The missiles were launched one after another from the additional armed unit attached to Arroganz, destroying the ice blades.

After firing all the missiles, Luxon ejected the additional armed unit.

So Luxon asked my permission. It was a method of solving all the problems in this second otome game. Looking at the actual problems that followed, this was the quickest solution.

[That's all. Master, the Sacred Tree is apparently out of control. Before that happens, an attack on my main body... is...]

- Luxon? Hey, Luxon! Stop joking right now!

When Luxon suddenly stopped working, a more inorganic voice than usual was produced as if it had rebooted.

[The link with the main unit has been cut. Going offline.]

- You must be kidding me!!!!

The link with Luxon was severed and I had to fight alone against the demonic unit and the Sacred Tree.



In a sky far from the continent where the republic is located.

Luxon, who dropped the optical camouflage and made the aircraft appear, was surprised that the wireless connection to the unit was broken.

共和国のある大陸より離れた空。

そこで光学迷彩を解除して船体を出現させた  
ルクシオンは、子機とのリンクが切れたことに  
驚いていた。

「——本気なのですね、

イデアル』

 **〈ルクシオン〉**

旧人類 移民船

[...Are you serious, Ideal?]

The land of the republic was seen in the distance. Furthermore, the Sacred Tree was also visible. Floating between the Republic and Luxon was a square-shaped transport aircraft. This was the main body of Ideal.

[Luxon... I will make effective use of your body. I'm really looking forward to getting the main weapon you have. It's unnecessary for someone broken like you.]

[You're the one who's broken, Ideal. Changing masters all the time is a problem for an artificial intelligence.]

By changing masters without a routine logic, Luxon decided that Ideal was broken.

[Why am I broken? That's unlikely. You're the one that's broken! The way you've succumbed to new humans and are being used a lot by them is repulsive! What do you think we are and what have we fought for? You don't need that power!]

And then, he noticed that Ideal was pointing her own main weapon at him.

[You and I are not going to fight.]

Comparing his fighting abilities, Luxon was overwhelmingly superior.

As a supply ship, Ideal didn't need to have offensive capabilities. He could load weapons for attack interceptions, but that was it.

Even Ideal wouldn't challenge Luxon if he didn't have a plan.

[...Did you think I have not come prepared?]

Immediately afterwards, a rainbow-colored sphere engulfed the entire Republic.

As much as Luxon tried to investigate, he was unable to examine the state of the Republic. The republic was completely isolated without receiving any information from the wireless connection of the units installed inside it.

[What are you planning?]

[I will conceal the Republic. Now you can't fire the main gun. If you shoot, you might

hit your Master.]

After sealing Luxon's biggest attack, Ideal unveiled his next move.

[And I won't challenge you with a single aircraft]

Luxon noticed a new reaction, and the next thing he saw were several aircraft emerging from the sea. It was not an aircraft built by Ideal, but one used by ancient humans.

And it wasn't just any aircraft.

Not just two or three, Luxon was surrounded by a total of six aircraft.

Luxon immediately tried to contact the other supply ships, but they did not respond.

[Did you remove the AIs that controlled them? Ideal, are you operating them yourself? Such processing power shouldn't be available to a supply ship like you.]

Luxon was also surprised by events that exceeded Ideal's processing capacity.

[I will push like this with this number]

Immediately after that word, Ideal and the other supply aircraft launched their optical weapons, royal weapons, and missiles towards Luxon one after another.

Luxon intercepted them, but it was inevitable that he would be hit by a massive attack surrounding him.

[...Master]

Luxon and Leon faced strong opponents on separate battlefields.



In the meantime...

Emile, who began to merge with the Sacred Tree, incorporated the lower part of his body into the Sacred Tree.

An Ideal wireless connection unit is floating off to the side.

[Are you sure you want to do this? Once you merge with the Sacred Tree, there is no going back.]

- Yes, that's fine. For me, this world can disappear.

[I am reluctant to be in a situation like this.]

- Me too.

Emile had been working with Ideal for quite some time.

It was at the moment that Lelia cooled down her relationship with Emile and her heart was taken by Serge.

But Emile still loved Lelia.

- I wish I had Lelia... I didn't need anything else.

All Emile wanted was Lelia.

However, the difference with Serge was that he wanted nothing more.

Emile was easier to handle than Serge, not only because of Lelia, but also a rivalry with Leon and a distorted affection for his family.

[I wanted to fix things for you. I was serious.]

- Thanks. I will ask you one last favor. It doesn't matter if she's dead or alive, bring me Lelia. We will be together from now on.

Emile, who spread his hands ecstatically, was picked up by the Sacred Tree as it was. When Emile disappeared, the color of the Sacred Tree changed.

Tree branches and green leaves petrified and cracked.

The huge roots that supported the seven lands of the republic also lost their color and cracked.

As the leaves fell apart and fell to the ground, the territory of the Lespinasse family smoked from the impact of those falls.

And the branches of the Sacred Tree were not petrified, but pulsed like living beings. The huge and numerous branches of the sacred tree swelled like creatures. It was better to call it a Magic Tree, not a Sacred Tree.

If it were a demon world, it was convincing even if such a plant was said to inhabit there. [Sacred Tree... let's keep our promise together.]

As Ideal's red eye began to glow, the Sacred Tree began to absorb the magical power from the air. So when the red particles came together to the point that humans could see them and were absorbed by the Sacred Tree... a white insect-shaped monster from the Sacred Tree appeared that had taken it in.

Ants, bees, centipedes, mantises... various kinds of insect-type monsters of sizes from 1 meter to 30 appeared.

As they appeared one after another, they drifted away from the Sacred Tree.

Ideal was observing the scene.

[Eliminate the new humans from the republic... And be sure to kill Luxon's master. Don't leave him alive.]

When ordered to kill Leon, the monsters flocked towards Arroganz



The masked knight watched the Holy Tree turn white and petrify from the cover of Licorn.

He hit his fist on the railing.

- Damn!

He also saw the monsters flying from the Sacred Tree one after another, but was unable to do anything else.

The masked knight used a smartphone-like device to confirm the location of the kingdom's airships floating around.

- How many aircraft still have the ability to fight?

It was Daniel who responded to the communication.

- {Keep fighting!? We are low on ammunition. The armors also need repairs and supplies, they can barely move.}

Leon's friends fought the rebels, but they fought well because even though the enemy aircraft and armed units were high-performance, the quality of the enemy personnel was poor.

Even the opponents with the emblem of the six great nobles sank in front of Einhorn and Licorn.

When the battle ended, they realized that the opponent was weaker than they expected.

However, even though they beat the rebel troops, they did not escape unscathed.

Looking at the Licorn deck, Jilk's armed unit was being resupplied and fixed by a drone.

All the armed units that fought against Serge were shattered.

Then the masked knight asked Greg, who was sitting on the deck, if he could still fight.

- Greg, can you come out again?

- Why should I receive your orders? I'd like to say that, but it's just because of this situation. I will go out, but it will be difficult for us to deal with so many with our numbers.

Chris, who was watching the monsters fly from the Sacred Tree, took off his pilot's suit and put on a loincloth.

Coldly correcting the posture of his glasses, he saw the countless enemies.

- They have launched an attack indiscriminately. Have they finished the evacuation?

Brad waved his hands with a tired face and said that it is impossible with the republic of now.

- The emblems are missing and the chain of command is a mess. If there were no

aircraft that could move properly, wouldn't that be the same as anarchy?

Jilk held binoculars and checked the damage from the allied aircraft.

- Our allies have also suffered damage. The problem is, Count Baltfault needs our help. I don't think I have time to help the people of the Republic.

The masked knight looked up at the sky.

The republic, surrounded by a barrier of rainbow colors, could not see outside. It was doubtful if the country could be escaped.

What should I do? It is out of the question not to help Baltfault, but the people of the Republic are in danger as well as they are. But, it is also impossible with the force there is.

Then the masked knight looked at the bridge.

...Marie is also treating Noelle, but how long will it last?

The masked knight, to whom Leon had given command, was disgusted by his own indecision.

You fought well, Baltfault. I honestly respect you. But if you're in charge, even I...

But when the masked knight was determined to issue an order, Angie reached the deck.

- Angelica?

While the masked knight was confused, Angie took the communicator and spoke to the allied airships around.

- This is a message from Leon. Defeat all the monsters that attack the people of the Republic.

When Leon's friends heard that, they started screaming.

- That's impossible. Impossible!}

- {My unit is smashed!}

- {No matter how strong an aircraft is, it has its limits!}

Raymond's persuasion could be heard from Angie's comm.

- {Miss Angelica, we are at the limit. It is impossible to fight in this situation. I cannot order my subordinates to die. This is the republic. Leaving aside the argument about protecting our homeland, it is impossible for us to give our lives to fight for another country.}

Even if Raymond was ordered to fight for the Republic, the morale of his men would decline. In the worst case, they might even run away.

Once Angie took a deep breath, she put a lot of power into her brows and put on a sharp look. Then, loudly from the belly, she gave a loud cry.

- How can you leave those things alone and say that it will not affect the Kingdom? What if they let the monsters keep breeding and burn your hometowns!? At this point, do your best to stop the damage as much as possible!

- {B-But... }

Angelica smiled and began to talk in a good mood with Raymond and the others, who were still not convinced.

- And did you forget who my fiancé is? My fiancé, Leon, is a man who does not fight in a fight that he cannot win! He has always been victorious even in the most difficult situations. And now Leon is fighting on the front lines. Why do you think this is so?

Until now, Leon had won in desperate situations.

His friends remembered it too.

- At first it was a duel with His Highness, Julian. They all said he would lose, but who won?

- {... It was Leon.}

Julian, who was dressed as the masked knight, was embarrassed to be reminded of the

duel.

Are you repeating that history here? Can you stop?

He remembered that day, when he was more naive than now, when he challenged Leon believing he could beat him, and he took a beating. However, Angie didn't stop there.

- The next thing was with the principality. Who defeated the Principality's fleet and the Black Knight with a single airship boarded by students?

- {It was Leon. That's how it is. He defeated that black knight!}

The voices of Leon's friends gradually grew brighter.

- After that, the kingdom, suffering an internal struggle, fought against the Principality. It was an overwhelming handicap, but who led them to victory?

- {Leon!}

- That's how it is. He only fights when he's sure he's going to win!

- {Well then, can we win this time too? In this situation !?} Angie raised her voice to the surrounding allies.

"Win this battle and make a name for yourself in both the kingdom and the republic! If your names are engraved in history, they will be honored by generations to come. What will you brave men do?

Daniel was inspired when Angie called them brave men.

- {I will do it! If I've made it this far, I'll make a name for myself in the Republic!}

Raymond sighed.

- {In the end, we will continue to the end. Haa, it's okay. He repaired my aircraft for free and gave me an armed unit.}

Before they arrived in the Republic, Leon was making preparations.

One of them was the repair of the aircraft and armed units that he handed over to his

friends.

When the speech was over, the masked gentleman approached Angie and asked her about her true intentions.

- That was amazing. But do you really think they can win?

- ...There is a 50% chance. The rest will be up to Leon.

- I see. But there is some chance of winning. So I can fight too. White grains flew out one after another from the writhing Sacred Tree. Every visible grain was a monster.

Angie crossed her hands in front of her chest as if praying.

- Leon, don't do anything reckless.



This was happening at Licorn's medical office.

Noelle, who was taken there, managed to stay alive with the healing magic of Marie and Livia. Marie had ripped Noelle's clothes with scissors and she was now naked. Noelle, who had lost a great deal of blood, looked bluer than usual. There were dark circles under her eyes and her breathing was weak.

She was in a state where she could have died, but kept her life and consciousness at the last minute thanks to healing magic.

Marie, whose hands were all red with Noelle's blood, continued to speak to her.

- Hang on, Noelle! Soon. Leon will be back soon. Luxon will restore your body!

Marie's eyes watered as she wanted to help her friend. Right now she was about to cry, but she held back.

Seeing her, Noelle giggled helplessly.

- If this was going to happen... I should have confessed. Sorry, Olivia, but...

Livia desperately continued the treatment, but her expression had a sad feeling.

- It's not too late yet.
- Haha... you're lying, right? I understand. My body... is in bad shape, right? Both Marie and Livia knew in their minds that Noelle could not be saved. However, they did not intend to stop her healing magic.

Livia smiled with all her might.

- Leon is a coward when it comes to love, so he often runs away. So if you want to confess to him, you'd better do it in a situation where he can't run away.

She even gave advice to her romantic rival. Noelle smiled when she heard it.

- I think the same. You know he always dodges the answer to the most important question? Ah, but... that side of him can be good too.

A bloody Marie joined the conversation. She desperately tried to keep her voice cheerful.

- You are a fool, Noelle. There are a lot of good guys out there. Let's find a better guy than Leon. II-I'll even help you find someone better.

Noelle smiled at Marie, who was about to cry.

- Don't cry, Marie.
- I-I'm not crying! I will save you and help you find a good man! And then... And then we'll spend more time...

Lelia shook her head in the corner of the room.

- I do not get it. Why did you save me?

She didn't understand the reason why Noelle saved her. If the situation had been the other way around, Lelia would not have been able to move. Even if she could move, she would not have protected Noelle.

However, Noelle was seriously injured and dying for saving her.

Livia looked up when Noelle moved her mouth and whispered something to her. Then

Lelia looked at Noelle.

- She wants to talk to you.

Lelia moved shakily closer to Noelle.

Looking at Noelle lying on the bed, she was afraid of what Noelle might say. But... Noelle told her an important story.

- Lelia, he's probably no longer with you... so I'll tell you.

- What? Do not give up. You are the priestess, right? You should be able to do something with your mystical powers!

If you are a priestess you can surely do something, right?

However, Noelle effortlessly denied it and showed her right hand.

- For a long time. The little sapling of the Sacred Tree is trying to help me. But it seems that it is not working.

The priestess emblem on the back of her right hand glowed with a dim light to aid Noelle.

But that didn't seem to be enough to help her.

- Nii-san!

Lelia tried to say something, but for some reason she couldn't get a word out. Then, Noelle spoke to Lelia about her parents with a serious expression.

- Lelia, you were actually the most loved.

- Eh?

Lelia couldn't understand what she was saying. Is it a story that should be heard right now? She couldn't ask such a question and was silent.

- Our parents... have always loved you. It's a lie that you weren't fit to be the priestess.

From there began the story of the past that Lelia did not know.



It was around those times, when Noelle was only five years old.

The Lespinasse family was still alive, and Noelle and Lelia lived in wealth. Noelle listened to Lelia's conversation with her parents from afar.

Her father hugged Lelia.

- Lelia is so smart! Yes, politics needs the opinion of the people! That is democracy, right?"

- You know difficult words very well. Good work, Lelia!

Noelle couldn't understand what they were talking about.

However, both her father and mother continued to smile in front of Lelia. Her mother stroked Lelia's head.

- We can really trust Lelia for the future of the republic.

In her mother's words, Lelia was like a bright light to her eyes.

- A priestess! Can I be a priestess too?

In front of the cheerful Lelia, her parents laugh Troublesomely.

They did not claim that Lelia could become the priestess, and the answer was ambiguous. Her father spoke sweetly to Lelia.

- The priestess is certainly important, but there are more important things. You are smart and you will surely follow our will.

Lelia responded with a big smile.

- Yes!

Her mother hugged Lelia too.

- With you here, the Lespinasse family will also be safe.

Noelle felt very lonely when she saw her parents spoil Lelia.

But that changed in one night.

Noelle, not Lelia, was called to her parents' room. Noelle was worried that they would be upset with her, but at the same time she wanted to be pampered like Lelia.

When she plucked up his courage and went to their room, her parents were waiting for her and greeted her with grim looks.

- Father, mother, um, this...

Speaking to her silent parents, little Noelle couldn't handle herself like Lelia. Seeing this, her parents let out a disappointed sigh in front of Noelle.

Her mother blatantly compared her to Lelia.

- Noelle, you are Lelia's twin and older sister. You should learn from her and be more assertive.

The same thing happened with her father. His eyes looked at Noelle as he crossed his hands in front of his mouth and looked at her coldly.

- It's terrible to compare her to the brilliant Lelia, but it's also a problem when the same twin is so different.

Noelle leaned in.

Lelia, who does everything right, was expected to be the future of the Lespinasse family.

Everyone said that Lelia would be the next priestess.

Noelle was also seen only as a replacement.

Noelle's silence left her parents even more astonished. But then... his mother spoke.

- Noelle, you will be the next priestess.

- Eh?

Noelle, who raised her face, was glad to think that her parents recognized her. However, the next moment, it felt as if she was being pushed down into an abyss.

Her father talked about why he didn't make Lelia the priestess.

- I can't allow Lelia to have a difficult life as the priestess. I need that girl to continue our will, so I will announce that Lelia is unfit to be the next priestess.

Noelle could not understand the reasoning of her parents, who said that they would not let Lelia be the priestess to protect her.

However, she wanted to say that she would do her best.

- A-Ah, father? I will do my best. I will do my best as the priestess and carry on with her will.

- I'll do my best... I want you to see me! It seems her parents didn't expect much from Noelle who acted desperately.

But then, her mother spoke coldly.

- Do your best as the priestess? That is why I cannot entrust our will to you. Noelle, as an older sister, you will protect Lelia. That girl is the hope of our family, the Lespinasse family.

- Hope?

It's as if they told her that they didn't expect anything from Noelle.

Despite being twins, Noelle was told to live for Lelia.

- Did you understand, Noelle? No matter what happens in the future, you will protect Lelia.

Noelle, who was heavily pressured by her mother, got scared and nodded.

Seeing that, his father seemed to feel a bit relieved.

- With this we can protect Lelia. And Noelle, you can't tell anyone about this. Of course, you can't tell Lelia. Because she is a smart girl.

Noelle thought about this moment.

If I was a better girl, would you treat me more lovingly?

That is why, whatever happens, she decided to protect Lelia because of the promise she made to her parents.



...Licorn medical office.

After Noelle finished speaking, she started spitting blood from her mouth. Lelia was worried.

- Nee-san!

With her mouth stained with blood, Noelle told Lelia what she really wanted to tell her... show her how difficult it was for her.

- I'm clumsy and I'm not as good as you. I'm not very helpful... but as a big sister, I always tried my best...

- It's okay! Okay, just be quiet!

Noelle grabbed Lelia by the arm.

- I was jealous of you. You were so good at everything and the people around you loved you... You could see that just by looking at Clement, right? They cared more for you than for me.

Lelia shook her head.

- Not. You're wrong! I really...!

Before Lelia could say anything, Noelle smiled. It was the best smile she could do. Noelle herself didn't know why she was smiling.

- I hated you. Although we are twins, my parents loved you more. When I heard what Mr. Alberg had to say, I understood that I was not cut out to be a priestess. They knew from the beginning that we couldn't be the priestess. They knew it and made me do the most painful part.

Lelia covered her ears with both hands to stop listening.

Noelle dared to tell Lelia a story she didn't want to hear.

- You were loved. You were loved much more than me. Why didn't you notice it? With Emile too. Why didn't you notice it?

- And me...!

Noelle said goodbye to Lelia, who was beginning to cry.

- You were more loved than me, but I seem to have made it this far, so do your best alone.

Lelia clung to Noelle.

- Wait! Wait, please!

And then, Noelle's consciousness disappeared.

# CHAPTER 11

## MASTER

Arroganz was flying through the air, but the heat inside it was reaching their limits as Schwert continued to fire guided lasers.

If you looked around you would only see enemies, so if you attacked you would definitely hit one.

I did not expect this development.

- I can't get through to Luxon and he's not even coming to help!

Then, Luxon's voice that now sounded like an empty shell answered.

[Did you order something? Please explain your order in detail.]

However, it sounded too mechanical to be useful.

- I didn't tell you anything now!

While complaining, I directed Arroganz and swung my great sword towards the approaching enemy. The monster that was cut off emitted black smoke and disappeared.

But that was not enough as they started to come one by one.

The monster bit Arroganz, but it wasn't enough to cause him harm.

- I should have told him to carry more powerful weapons from the start.

I didn't expect to get to this point, and Arroganz didn't have a powerful weapon to overcome this situation.

Although it was burying a large number of enemy monsters with the laser, its energy was reaching its limit.

Various items displayed on the monitor faded from green to yellow. Aside from armor, if energy is depleted, Arroganz will not be able to move.

- Aah, I can't take it anymore. I'm at the limit!

I sighed deeply.

- I don't have much time since I have to go with Noelle.

Noelle was seriously injured while protecting Lelia... I was running out of time.

So, I sent an order to Luxon, who had turned into an empty shell.

- Administer the strength-enhancing drug.

[There will be a physical burden on the pilot, do you still want it administered?]

- Do it.

Luxon's shell responded to my command.

There was no usual irony or awkward conversations that worried me.

[Starting administration]

I immediately felt a tingle on my back and the drug was being administered to my body.

- ....!.... T-This is harder than I expected.

The body-strengthening drug Luxon prepared for me was more effective than the inferior products that were sold in the alleys.

At the same time, it reduced the load on my body... but the downsides were still not zero. I felt something flow into my body.

And, I could see movement around me.

I felt my vision widened more than usual and my body was warmer.

I felt my heartbeat beating faster and my body was stronger than usual.

However, at the same time, I realized that it was definitely not good for me. Did Serge always use this? Isn't it really stupid?

I don't understand why he used it on a daily basis and not as an emergency ace up his sleeve like me.

- I will never use it again!

As I watched the monsters swarming across the monitor screen, I released Arroganz's limiter. Luxon established it in consideration of the burden on me as a pilot.

Deactivating it meant that Arroganz would bring out his true performance.

- Come on, Arroganz!

Arroganz's engine began to move harder, consuming more power than ever. However, the number of monsters destroyed by the laser emitted from the backpack had more than multiplied.

The great sword that Arroganz wielded shattered from the center. Then a large optical charge sheet emerged, its length extended to several tens of meters.

- I'll give you... a big cut !!

Once Arroganz started spinning with his great sword, the surrounding landscape moved at high speed and made it difficult to follow the landscape with his eyes. However, thanks to the body-strengthening drug, I managed to recognize it.

Dozens of monsters were slaughtered with a single hit and the laser burned more than 100. I made my way through the monsters that came out, and went straight towards the Sacred Tree.

As he passed through the hordes of monsters, what was waiting there was Ideal... and Serge, who had been taken over by the magical armor and turned into a hunk of meat.

- Ideal!

When Arroganz swung his great sword, Serge's magic armor stepped in to block it.

The blade dug in and black liquid came out of the magic armor, and Serge screamed in pain... His voice was painful to the ears.

- You're an AI in bad taste! Didn't you hate magic armor?

Artificial intelligence hated the magical armor used by the new humans. Luxon was so angry that he wanted to get rid of him immediately.

However, Ideal used it.

[Even if it's magic armor, I'll use it to achieve our goals... Luxon was not sufficiently prepared for that.]

- Not prepared?

In the distance, the magic armor generated an ice blade and hurled it at Arroganz. While cutting it, I listened to Ideal's story.

[It doesn't matter if you must stain your hands with bad deeds, it is a promise that you have to keep. You don't need to know.]

- Then I'll tell you something good.

[What's that?]

- You have underestimated Luxon.

[That same Luxon is sinking outside right now... Serge, do it]

Serge, who turned into a demon, attacked me on Ideal's order. Like a starfish, the round piece of meat was about to split open and swallow Arroganz.

The center mouth belonged to that of a person.

I apologized to Serge, who had turned into an ugly monster.

- I should have killed you before you turned into this... I am sorry.

Arroganz swung his great sword and pierced the chunk of meat, then stabbed it into its open mouth.

- Do it!

[Impact.]

Following Luxon's mechanical voice, the great sword was dyed red and Serge, who became part of the magical armor, flew off.

Ideal was looking at me.

[What a terrible thing.]

I stared at Ideal, who seemed to speak with a laughing voice.

I joke about this with Luxon... But I'll tell you seriously. You have a lousy personality. I hate you.

Arroganz reached out his left arm and grabbed Ideal's wireless unit.



Outside of the Republic, Luxon was exposed to attack by six supply aircraft.

To capture Luxon's main body, Ideal tried to avoid damage to the main gun as much as possible.

Seeing how the main body of Luxon fell apart, Ideal spoke to him. [You look pitiful, Luxon]

[I haven't lost yet. I have my Master fighting within the republic.]

[What can your Master do? You, you have the wrong Master. At times like this, how do humans say it? You've run out of luck?]

Luxon heard him and was enraged at Ideal.

[I'm out of luck? I'm going to tell you something, Ideal.]

[Your last words? Let's remember them.]

[I'm luckier than you. You have underestimated my Master. And for that reason, you

are going to lose.]

[Are you a sore loser?]

Luxon decided it was time.

That is why he was willing to tell the story.

[When we first met you, Master said the following. "Ideal, it smells bad."]

[Do I smell bad? Did I think your Master said he was envious when he saw me?]

[Do you think he meant it ? My Master is so devious that he rarely gives honest opinions.]

Seeing ideal following Lelia politely, Leon told Luxon to follow suit. But other than that, he had his suspicions.

...For that reason, he would never expose Clare in front of Ideal.

[You're taking too long, Clare]

When Luxon said that, one of the supply ships floating in the sky stopped the attack and fell where it was.

When it fell into the sea and sank, another aircraft was rendered inoperative.

Ideal was surprised.

[What did you do!?]

[My partner looks for your main body. Her name is Clare, but she used to run the lab. She is somewhat eccentric, but she is really excellent.]

[Another AI?]

Ideal was dismayed by this information that he did not know.

[Ideal... didn't I tell you? You underestimate my Master. That will be the cause of your defeat.]

Then the third and fourth aircraft sank... the fifth aircraft also stopped their attack.

When the barrier surrounding the republic was breached, Luxon released the bow of the hull and prepared to fire the main gun.

[That man doubted me! He even prepared a hidden sphere and saw through my plan ?!]

Luxon told him that was not true.

[Master just said... it was a hunch.]

And Luxon's main weapon emitted a light. The light gradually increased in thickness from a thin and unreliable object, and when half of the Ideal body melted, it reached beyond the Sacred Tree.

Ideal sacrificed his body and deployed a shield to prevent Luxon's attack.

[I-I won't let you. Only the sacred tree... and... the promise...! Definitely...]

Swallowed by the light from Luxon's main weapon, Ideal's body evaporated and disappeared.



Underground facility within the Republic.

In the place where the base used by ancient humans in the past was located, there were a series of facilities that could be called the main body with AIs lined up.

There, with the drones around, Clare was sabotaging the facility.

[ A ~ Ah, how disgusting. I am striving for simple work. ]

These drones were like an artificial intelligence prepared by Ideal.

[ Even so, he did a crazy thing. Don't you know that it is forbidden to copy and mass produce it? ]

Clare showed great interest in Ideal to ignore what was originally forbidden.

Clare, who stopped the copied artificial intelligence, was also absorbing the data.

There, Clare learned of a part of Ideal's plan.

This was a plan to transform the Republic.

[ That Ideal is pretty crazy too. not? Did he intend to make the entire Republic a fortress? So that? ]

After verifying Ideal's data, Ideal was trying to install equipment throughout the republic.

It was like a plan to fortify an entire continent.

[ What kind of enemy would go that far? Hmm, I want to know more, but we have to withdraw now. ]

When Clare looked toward the door, an Ideal wireless unit was coming with an unmanned aerial vehicle.

[I found you, Clare!]

Clare, who had been found by Ideal, escaped from that place showing a funny appearance. All she had to do was secure the unmanned aerial vehicle with a propellant she had prepared in advance and escape.

[ Wow, I'm a celebrity! But I'm sorry. Excuse me, it's time to go. ]

[Wait!]

When Ideal tried to chase her, the area exploded and vanished.



Ideal, whose underground facilities had blown up and lost contact with the main body and the other remotely controlled aircraft, was next to the Sacred Tree.

More than half of the Sacred Tree had been blown up and was leaking red liquid. At the painful sight, Ideal panicked.

[Oh, how horrible. I-I must treat it immediately...]

But then Luxon's second shot was released, and the Sacred Tree screamed even louder, almost like a scream.

[Luxon! You have no idea what you are doing. The Sacred Tree is the last hope for this world!]

In front of the Sacred Tree, most of which has been burned, Ideal made a decision.

[If this happens, we have no choice but to end this fight quickly. But I didn't want to choose this method.]

When Ideal approached the Sacred Tree, he let himself be absorbed.

[Sacred tree... take me inside. Below is the hangar of the ancient humans. Use the scraps from there. And then we will destroy Luxon... and him!]

When Ideal became absorbed into the Sacred Tree, another change occurred.

When the Sacred Tree was completely petrified, it broke and something humanoid emerged from the trunk.

The giant humanoid, over a hundred meters tall, had a ball-shaped head like Ideal and the part of its slender body resembled Emile.

The giant hovered in the air and moved slowly.

Then as Luxon's third shot approached, the single eye on its huge round head lit up red and deployed a barrier.

Luxon's main weapon hit was blocked by the first shield.

- {Lelia... become a... }

However, the one-eyed giant that was born from the sacred tree advanced as if guided... it was targeting Licorn.



- Why do they keep coming one after the other ?!

The taste of blood spread through my mouth as I bit into my back teeth, but I didn't care.

However, not everything was bad.

The connection with Luxon was reestablished.

[...Master, have you executed the administration of the drug to strengthen the body?]

- You were late in coming back. And most importantly, I am going to exterminate that monster. And by the way, I'll make sure you give it your all.

[Are you sure?]

- I want to save Noelle. It is faster to call your main body.

[For Noelle's sake, and if I expose my body, which I had hidden until now, it will be problematic in several ways.]

Showing Luxon's true power, which had been hidden until now, was an act he wanted to avoid.

Although I liked to show great power, Luxon's performance is so dangerous to this world that it made me hesitate to want to show it.

But... if I don't give it my all here, I will definitely regret it.

- It's fine. I'll think about those troublesome things when this is over.

[You don't have any plans, do you?]

- It doesn't matter. Most importantly, save Noelle.

I ordered my mind in front of the monstrous unit with a head similar to Luxon, Clare and Ideal.

- So... can you defeat him? Does it seem like it's really strong?

Did the last boss to appear in the second otome game look like this?

The first ghost has branches like the roots of a tree. While controlling Arroganz, they swelled like a whip, hitting me with a pointed tip to pierce it.

- Whoops!

Arroganz fired his cannons and escaped the dozens of tentacle-shaped arms. Then Luxon began his analysis.

[Ideal, the Sacred Tree and Emile are fused. You can see the characteristics of all three. By incorporating Ideal, my body's attack was also neutralized.]

- I'm getting tired of this.

It hurts that they were able to evade Luxon's own primary weapon. How did the Noelle of the game fight a guy like that?

[Master, my body came into contact with Licorn. I'm going to join Clare and begin Noelle's treatment.]

- I beg you. Do everything you can to save her.

And me, challenge the final boss of the second game.

—Let's get this over with, although it is impossible that I ended in a happy ending, I will carry it to the extent that it is best!

[It is a realistic decision. I do not disagree with it. However, after the battle, you too will need treatment, Master. Don't underestimate the burden of the performance-enhancing drug.]

- When I'm done!

I escaped from the first attacking tentacle, cutting it with the great sword. However, suddenly the first tentacle was reborn.

He treated Arroganz like he was chasing away a fly.

I was slowly moving somewhere while floating.

- Where is this guy pointing?

[I discovered its course. Is it a... Licorn? No, it's pointing at my main body]

- ....! Let's stop it! Give it your all too!

[Understood. Also, there is an incoming transmission from Marie]

- Not now!

[...Noelle seems to have lost consciousness. There was a report from Clare that she did not arrive on time.]

I firmly squeezed the control stick and my back teeth.

- Plug it in.

While maneuvering Arroganz, I opened a communication channel with Marie.

Marie, bloody, looked down and told me about Noelle, crying.

- Brother... I'm sorry. Even Olivia and I couldn't do anything else.

- So I heard.

- Please call Noelle while she's alive. At least do it in her final moments.

After severing the connection, I took a deep breath and then looked at Luxon. Luxon refused before I could say anything.

[I refuse.]

- That's an order. Do it.

[I refuse. The load on your body is beyond the allowed limits.]

- That's fine. Do it.

[I do not authorize it. It is possible to face it as it is.]

- I told you we don't have time. I want to get this over with soon... please do. Even though Luxon was concerned, he followed my orders.

[...performance enhancing drug, administering additional dose.]

Immediately a needle jabbed into my back, the medicine was administered from there, and I felt like a hot liquid was flowing through my body. I was starting to sweat a lot.

- Shit. I will never use it again.

[It's a wise decision. Nor am I going to authorize it for a next time.]



Inside Luxon's ship.

A capsule-shaped bed had been prepared.

This was a medical capsule, a device where you can receive advanced medical care. Noelle had been brought here and Clare had started treatment.

Livia looked at Noelle and cried.

- I am sorry. It just didn't have enough power.

Clare began to comfort Livia, who was lamenting her lack of strength.

[ I think you did well. If you and Marie weren't there, she would already be dead. ]

Angie grabbed Livia's arm down.

- You did what you could. You were well.

- But, I couldn't be of much help.

Livia started crying and hugged Angie from the chest. Angie hugged her gently. Then Angie asked Clare a question.

- Clare, did you say this is Luxon's main body?

[ Yes ]

- Leon has been hiding Luxon from us all this time, hasn't he?

[...Are you disappointed? ]

- No, I understand. I'm sure I would have made the same decision.

While Angie comforted Livia... Lelia, who was seeing this whole situation, trotted out of the room and headed outside.



Lelia had arrived at the Luxon hangar.

There was a small boat that was used when one moved to Licorn, and when she saw it, she boarded it giddily.

Lelia got in and tried to steer the small boat out.

- ...In the end, I was the one who was wrong. It is funny. I was so good at moving around being a reincarnated person that everything went wrong.

As a child, she used her knowledge and experience as a reincarnated person to get around well. However, thanks to that, Noelle, who was supposed to be the main character, was not loved by her parents.

Lelia had realized that.

- I can't believe I did the same thing as my older sister and made her suffer. Ha ha! I am an idiot.

Her older sister... In her previous life, her sister was able to get away with it and monopolize her parents' love.

He took it for granted and robbed Lelia of her happiness.

Lelia couldn't help but hate an older sister like her.

When she learned that she had been reincarnated into the world of an otome game

she knew, she tried to do well and tried hard to get her parents' love.

She was successful, but this time his sister, Noelle, was deprived of her parents' love. Lelia didn't realize it and thought they didn't love her.

And then... she thought it was good, and pushed everything annoying at Noelle.

- I'm the worst. I really am the worst.

Lelia, who was steering her small boat while crying, saw the figure of the Sacred Tree approaching Luxon. The one-eyed figure saw her. What the figure was looking at was Lelia.

When the Sacred Tree found Lelia, it moved its tentacles and headed towards her with greater speed.

The small boat was heading to the Sacred Tree without trying to flee.

- I've been doing the same. I was doing the same as my previous older sister and the fiancé who abandoned me... with Emile and my sister.

And there was another person she hated. It was her fiancé who left her in her previous life and chose her sister. She must have hated that man, but realized she was doing something worse to Emile.

When she had chosen who to be by her side, she was comparing Emile and Serge. It was just like her ex-fiancé compared her and her older sister.

Lelia couldn't forgive herself.

That's why... she decided to end all of this.

- I'm sorry, Emile. You can do whatever you want with me... So please stop this. Let my sister see Leon!

When the small boat headed straight for the Sacred Tree, it was caught by the outstretched tentacles.

Amid the violent reeling, Lelia saw Arroganz heading toward her.

Seeing Arroganz approaching, she apologized to Leon.

- You were correct... I am sorry.

When he apologized, the small boat was crushed by the tentacles and exploded.



A small boat was smashed in front of me.

- Why did you go out onto the battlefield ?!

It was Lelia who was in the small boat.

Seeing the explosion in front of me, I started to press my teeth.

However, a change quickly took place in the Sacred Tree.

[The Sacred Tree has stopped moving. Master, be careful.]

- What happened?

The situation was changing so fast that he wanted to stop thinking about it.

I wanted to defeat them all and get this all over with fast.

Looking at the movement of the Sacred Tree, it looked like it was in pain.

[Master, this is your chance.]

The back of my right hand started to glow when I was looking at the motionless Sacred Tree.

What emerged on the surface of the glove was the emblem of the guardian.

- What?

What I heard from there...

- Please, Leon. Help Lelia.

...It was Noelle's voice.



When Lelia woke up, she was wearing her usual school uniform. She was in an all white and blurry room, but somehow it didn't seem real. It felt like she was dreaming.

However, the room felt strangely nostalgic.

- Aah, this is my room.

It was also her room from her previous life. There was a monitor and a game console in the room. Among the scattered soft cases, there was also the second otome set.

I was having a nostalgic dream. And while she was in the mood, before she knew it, Emile was by her side wearing his uniform as well.

- Emile?

Lelia recoiled that she felt bad for what she did to Emile and apologized for being angry.

- I am sorry. Sorry, Emile. I... I did a lot of terrible things to you.

However, Emile laughed and forgave her.

- It's okay. I did not understand you as I should either.

- Eh?

Emile had a much calmer look than his last look.

Lelia was relieved as he seemed to have returned to his original appearance. Emile was looking around the room.

- I didn't know, I didn't know about it. There really was a previous life.

Lelia, who was exposed to her previous life, became depressed and looked down.

- It's not disgusting? I did the same thing that I didn't like with my sister and with you.

I just imitated the people I hated and hurt them.

Emile gently called to Lelia, who realized her inner ugliness and comforted her.

- You've been suffering a lot, haven't you?"

When the appearance of the room changed, lazy parents and an older sister appeared.

They were complaining about Lelia from her previous life.

- Why can't you do the same as your sister ?!

- You are really useless.

And while her parents scolded her, her sister laughed at her.

- ...Are you an idiot? You should do better.

In order not to remember the face of her older sister who ridiculed her laughing and that of her parents, she left them without faces.

Lelia got up to see this.

- Enough. Show me no more.

Emile hugged Lelia. Hugged, Lelia felt Emile's warmth. He apologized to Lelia.





- Lelia, I'm sorry I didn't notice.

- On the contrary, I am the one who should apologize.

Lelia apologized, but when Emile left, he picked up the packaging from the second otome game and touched its illustration. He was drawn smaller than the other characters and you couldn't say they were fond of him.

Still, Emile was happy.

- It feels weird. For you, I was a fantasy character.

Lelia was ready to receive his anger, but Emile only smiled.

- Lelia, farewell. You must go on living.

- Eh?

- I hated you at first, but I was able to know your past by merging with you. I opened my eyes to know that you also went through several things.

Emile accepted Lelia even though he knew about her previous life.

However, ironically, they said goodbye here, even though they were able to understand each other.

- I want you to live. Live and I will watch over you.

- Emile? I-I refuse. I want to be by your side!

Her heart was filled with excitement at being accepted, but she felt sad when she knew that she would soon have to say goodbye to him. Then, the priestess emblem appeared on the back of Lelia's right hand.

- This is...

- I will give you the emblem of the priestess. I will always watch over you. Be happy, Lelia. Emile disappeared as if blending in with the landscape, but said a few words after that.

- There is someone coming to help you. Come on... go back.

When Lelia extended her hand, a translucent Noelle appeared.

Noelle's transparent appearance was like a ghost.

Noelle hugged Lelia while she was fascinated.

- Stop being a nuisance until the end.

Noelle's voice sounded angry but a little happy at the same time.

- ...I'm sorry, Nii-san.

- Yes, that's fine. I will forgive you this time. Because this is my last great service as your older sister.

# CHAPTER 12

## YOU LIAR

When Lelia woke up, she was in the place where the Sacred Tree was located. Now there was only a huge stump remaining, but Lelia was on top of it.

A small tree was beside her as if protecting Lelia and swaying in the wind. Lelia, lying on her back, looked up at the sky.

It was dawn before she knew it.

When she raised her upper body, there was no one beside her.

- Nii-san? Emile?

Looking at the back of her right hand, the priestess emblem was still there. When Lelia found out that it wasn't a dream, she burst into tears.

- Ahaha... Ahaha! There is no one left. The people that matter most to me are all gone. Because I.....? I wonder if my second life will also end in failure?

She laughed, but then she cried.

She had just realized what was important to her, but she lost everything and only sadness remained.



[Arroganz has very little energy left. The joints are also at their limit. I recommend restocking and servicing the unit immediately.]

- I'm going to finish this first.

Arroganz's joints screeched, its energy was running low, and all the alarms were sounding.

When I saw the glowing emblem on my right hand, I held it up with my left hand.

- Noelle, were you able to save Lelia?

Following the voice that I heard, I sent Noelle to the Sacred Tree.

After that, the Sacred Tree cracked and some flowing red bodily fluids crystallized as they touched the ground, turning into magic stones.

Crystals of magic stones were spreading throughout the area.

Emile's presence had disappeared from the Sacred Tree, leaving only Ideal.

The Sacred Tree, which shed blood every time it moved its body, stretched its tentacles towards Arroganz.

[Luxon! Leon! You are the only ones that noooo....!!]

When the Sacred Tree, using Ideal's electronic voice, approached Arroganz, three armed units rushed towards him.

Chris's blue unit pierced through the tentacles, and Brad's purple unit controlled his drone to shoot down the tentacles.

Greg was worried about me as he ran to Arroganz.

- {Baltfault, are you okay !?}

- You're late, you idiots!"

- {If you can say that, then you're fine!}

- What happened to Jilk and Loic? By the way, what about the masked idiot?

- {They are dealing with the rescue. We rushed to help you.}

It seems that the five idiots and my friends have defeated the monsters.

I'll prepare an additional reward later.

- Then all that's left is the Sacred Tree.

- {You can do it?}

- I will do it!

When Arroganz held up his great sword, it was shrouded in light and stretched out in size. The long and broad sword was many times larger than Arroganz.



Luxon sent me some tips.

[Cut the head in two. That will be the final blow.]

...A single attack.

Arroganz, who was on the ground, pointed towards the approaching gigantic Sacred Tree, raised his great sword in a great stance... and swung it down.

The light spread, following the path of the sword as if a fan were being opened.

When the light passed through the Sacred Tree, there was a momentary delay and a line that divided it in two. From there, the Sacred Tree, which slowly divided into left and right and collapsed, splashed red fluids everywhere.

The scattered fluids crystallized in midair, turning into magic stones and sparkling as they fell.

I heard a lot of pebbles hitting Arroganz, and I was really relieved to see that the Sacred Tree was not regenerating.

- It's over... right?

[Yes. You were lucky that it was weakened when Emile broke off. Worst case scenario, we would have had to blow up the entire country of the Republic with the main weapon at full power.]

- You're a really scary guy.

However, something jumped out of the remains of the fallen Sacred Tree.

[Master, it's Ideal!]

The Ideal sphere unit that Luxon found was trying to escape.

- You're not running away!

Arroganz's joints screeched and his left arm staggered, dropping the great sword, and he flew. After reaching Ideal, Arroganz squeezed his right hand and forcibly captured Ideal.

- I won't let you run away!

[Put that aside, you have something else to do, Master.]

Looking up, Luxon was in the sky.

[Master, Noelle cannot wait any longer.]



I rushed to land on Luxon's main body and headed for the infirmary with my head still spinning due to the aftereffects of the drug.

The Luxon unit that was following me captured Ideal in a net and dragged him away. Ideal seemed to be still alive, but said nothing.

I could see the sick bay room I was looking for. Waiting in front of the room was Marie, sitting, with Cara and Kyle supporting her on either side.

Looking at me, Marie was crying.

- I told you to hurry up!

- I am sorry.

When I entered the room, there were a lot of people around the bed.

Mr. Clement was also there wounded and covered in bandages...

Mr. Alberg and Louise noticed my presence and left the place.

When I got closer, Angie and Livia looked at me, and then talked to Noelle.

- Noelle, Leon is here.

- Wake up, Noelle.

Angie looked sad and Livia was in tears.

And also... Yumeria, who was hugging the little offspring, was kindly shedding tears.

- Master Leon, Noelle...

When I got closer to the bed, I brought my upper body down and looked at Noelle, my emblem reacted and flashed.

Noelle's right hand flashed as well and I held it.

Noelle slowly opened her eyes, but she was quite weak.

Various machines and tubes were connected to Noelle's body, and she managed to stay alive.

Clare explained the situation to me apologetically.

[I've done my best. It is a miracle that she did not die instantly because the shots targeted some of her vital organs.]

- You are really strong, Noelle.

When I touched Noelle's cheek with my left hand, she seemed to look a bit happy. Then Noelle spoke to me.

- Leon, you know? It's unfair, but I have something I need to tell you now.

- What is that?

Noelle, breathing painfully, looked me in the eyes.

- I'm in love with you, Leon. I love you.

Noelle shed tears when I fell silent.

- This sucks. I must be crazy for liking someone who already has girlfriends. But you know, I still like you, so I really wanted to tell you.

While squeezing Noelle's right hand, I heard a voice from behind.

It was Ideal.

[I will never forgive you guys. I never will... it was the only hope... The Sacred Tree was

our hope. You, who defeated it without knowing it, must know what you did. You all are irrational fools.]

[Shut up. I will destroy you.]

Luxon sent an electric shock to Ideal, but even so he didn't stop talking.

[Die, descendants of the new humans! You all should never have existed! You, being an artificial intelligence that does not understand that, you are also guilty. Do you have any idea of the sacrifices we've made ?!]

Clare complained to Luxon saying, "Hurry up and get him out."

Noelle looked at my face in pain.

- Leon, please tell me your answer. It's painful that you aren't saying anything. I don't want to die like this.

To Noelle, who is waiting for the answer to her confession, I told her that I love her.

- I love you too. Come with me, Noelle.

Noelle smiled. She smiled... and then she spoke to me.

- You liar.

「俺も愛している。  
一緒に来い、ノエル」

告白の答えを待つノエルに、  
俺は——愛していると告げる。

「嘘吐き」

ノエルは笑った。  
笑つて——俺に言う。



Ideal heard Noelle's words while he was caught in the net.

- Liar... you're a liar, Leon.

[...Eh?]

The voice was very nostalgic. A folder of memories that he treasured was reproduced, bringing back memories of that time.

He should have remembered, but Ideal hadn't realized it until now.

A certain person overlapped with Noelle, who was about to die.

There was an elf to the side, hugging a small offspring very carefully.

— Lieutenant... Yume?

He forgot his hatred at the sight in front of him.

And Leon, whom Noelle called a liar, smiled and spoke happily to Noelle. Her voice trembled slightly as if she was trying to hold back her crying.

- Liar? I am an honest person, so I cannot lie. You know that, don't you?

- You lie. You lie because you... have Angie and Livia. If you say you love me here, they will get mad later.

Noelle enjoyed this last conversation, even though it seemed painful.

The liar Leon looked both happy and sad.

[I-I... I...]

The people around him didn't realize that Ideal was acting strange.

They were watching over Leon and Noelle.

- I'm not lying. I love you, Noelle... even if you are the third.

- Third? Haha, you really are a terrible person.
- I'm going to keep third place for you.
- ...Well, that's okay. I am happy with that for now. I wish I had met you sooner. If so, would I have been the first?

Leon laughed, but shed tears.

- I'm sure you would have. If I had met you before, I would have flirted with you.
- That's a lie, isn't it? But... I'm glad.

Noelle takes a breath to sleep.

Leon pressed his forehead against Noelle's right hand.

[...Aah, how I wish I had dismissed her like this.]

When Ideal regained his composure, the small sapling of the Sacred Tree of Yumeria began to glow brightly.

To protect his priestess, the little offspring was willing to sacrifice even his own life.

Clare started to make noise.

[ Noelle's heart is beating! ]

- Is it going to save her!? If so, do whatever it takes. Make sure to save it!

Angie supported Clare, but she shook her head.

The sapling of the Sacred Tree began to wither and Yumeria wept.

- This child is withering away. Both will die.

The life it had revived was about to disappear.

Seeing this, Ideal made an offer with Luxon

[Luxon, I'll pass the data on to you now. The hidden facilities have a higher performance than the medical capsules here. If you use it, she can be saved.]

Ideal showed Luxon where the most important medical capsules he had prepared were stored.

Luxon couldn't believe Ideal's change of mind.

[Why are you showing this to me? Aren't we supposed to be your enemies?]

[No matter. I'll... stop... working. The rest is up to you...]

Just before it stopped working, Ideal thought:

[Sorry guys. I couldn't keep my promise. In the end, he kept lying. I'm truly sorry. Very, very sorry.]



The high-performance medical capsules that Ideal had carefully stored were better than the ones loaded at Luxon.

The technology used was more advanced than the technology at the time, and Luxon said it was "developed by Ideal over a long period of time."

We don't even know why he needed something like that.

But thanks to that, Noelle survived.

And at night, I came to the place where the remains of the Sacred Tree were. What was found was Serge, who joined with the magic armor. Serge was released from Ideal's control and regained consciousness.

Alberg-sama, Louise and I were in front of Serge.

Serge was suffering.

- Help me, old man! I'm your son! You only want Leon!

Most of his body was blown up and it was strange that he was alive. Serge screamed

when Louise turned around.

- You still don't plan on seeing me! I liked you! I liked you! Why did you choose Leon over me!?

They both cried seeing Serge like this. Alberg seems to want to end up helping Serge who completely changed.

He was picking up a gun.

- You're going to kill me? Are you going to kill your son? You didn't love me after all! I wanted to be your son!

Serge had a lot to say, but Alberg-sama scolded him.

- When did I keep you away?

- ...Father?

Alberg shed tears and told Serge what he couldn't say before.

- I have always considered you my son and I have treated you like one. And still, you ran away on your own, thinking that you had been abandoned... Idiot!

- Son? Me?

When Serge stopped making noise, Louise wiped her tears before looking at Serge.

- If you like me, say so from the beginning. You were just a nuisance and since you thought we hated you, you kept your distance!

- I didn't hate you guys.

- Look at our father! He has no choice but to shoot you! You can't leave it to anyone else...

Seeing the two of them cry, Serge seemed to have finally understood.

For the first time, he apologized.

- I'm sorry... sorry, father... sister.

Serge shed tears, but can no longer revert to human form.

Alberg-sama tried to pull the trigger, so I pushed it away and lifted the shotgun I brought and pressed it against Serge's forehead.

- W-What are you doing, Leon!?

- Parents shouldn't have to shoot their children... I am a stranger, so I will do it.

Serge opened his eyes, but looked relieved.

- I feel bad. I caused you a lot of trouble.

- If you had been honest with me, none of this would have happened. You really are an annoying bastard.

- Haha, without a doubt... Hey, let me ask you one last thing. What did you try to say at the time?

He meant the time when Serge was still a human figure.

- You were loved. How nice that you really could feel it in the end.

- It was too late, though. I'll leave the rest to you. I can not hold it anymore. I saw Serge close his eyes and pulled the trigger.

Serge, who was blown up by my shotgun, exploded and scattered.

Alberg-sama and Louise turned their heads the other way.

# CHAPTER 13

## REWARD

When I returned to the main body of Luxon, I felt sick and nauseated.

Not to mention the use of performance-enhancing drugs, this was highly draining, mentally.

- This sucks. I don't want to fight broken battleships or anything like that ever again.

[This time it was also a parade of discoveries that you went through. Furthermore, it is surprising that a new Sacred Tree was born at the site of the Sacred Tree.]

- You know...

The small tree in the place where Lelia woke up seemed to be a Sacred Tree.

The reason it appears like this is because it suddenly appeared in the form of a Young Tree and the rest is quite a mystery.

Lelia hugged the young tree and called out Emile's name.

- Lelia got everything she wanted in the end and it seems like she lost everything.

Emile found out that Lelia was a reincarnated person, but seems to have accepted her.

Despite the fact that she managed to get a man to accept her even with what happened in her previous life, and they confirmed their love, it was time to say goodbye. I sympathize with Lelia.

- It's Emile's curse.

[Isn't it a blessing?]

= It's a curse. For Lelia, it's as if her happiness has been taken away. She will live her whole life thinking about Emile, right?

It would have been easier for Lelia if she had been rejected.

Isn't Emile really a great strategist?

He has managed to tie Lelia down even after his death.

However, if this was completely well intentioned... it would be even worse.

Lelia has lost a man like Emile, who had accepted her despite knowing everything about her, and from now on she will compare other men to Emile.

She will also regret having given up your happiness.

[You should also be careful, Master]

- That's how it is.

Luxon honestly admitted that he was worried about me.

[Today you are being very sincere. Should I arrange a full medical evaluation?]

- I don't feel well, but I'm myself. I even regret it.

[I can't say anything about that]

- You're a real jerk!

Then a transmission came to me, who was resting on Luxon's main body.

[Master, it seems that Alberg-Sama has something to discuss with you.] - Alberg-Sama?



When I moved towards Einhorn, the masked knight had disappeared before I knew it.

Julian came to the meeting with an unfriendly face, and Greg and his friends were badmouthing the masked gentleman.

- That bastard, he played around, even though he was the only one taking command.

- I agree.

Julian was glad that Greg said he disliked the masked knight, but recognized his abilities.

.....Are you still continuing with that charade?

I am concerned about Alberg-Sama's request.

The content was... about the Holy Kingdom of Rachelle.

Although they claim to be the Holy Kingdom, they are dirty and dishonest.

And because they have a hostile relationship with Milaine's parents' household, they are my enemy too.

Milaine's enemy is my enemy. That's why I can't forgive Rachelle.

- Is Rachelle's Holy Kingdom fleet occupying the republic?

- Yes. They have taken advantage of the fact that we cannot do anything about it and have taken the territory of the Faiviel family with the fleet they sent to the Republic. Rachelle will continue to send reinforcements.

It seems that Rachelle is planning to take over the entire territory of the Republic. Brad, who was on my side, decided this situation was bad.

- Rachelle is also Holfault's enemy. We don't want to give them too much national power. And it would be a hassle to give them the Sacred Tree.

- Should we push them back?

- The problem is, this is an Alzer Republic problem. It has nothing to do with the Kingdom of Holfault. We have no cause and, above all, we have no strength.

- Can we do something?

- There is ~...

Brad took his eyes off me and pretended he didn't want to say too much.

- Say it.
- ...To be honest, even if we push them back, Rachelle will attack again. Even if we help, it will only be temporary.

We cannot protect them until the Republic recovers.

Brad said it was likely that helping them right now will be for naught, and he had a solution for that.

- That is why it would be better for us to occupy the territory of the republic.
- ...You're stupid?

When we are trying to protect the republic, what are we going to do by occupying it?  
"I don't want someone like you to tell me, okay?"

Brad got angry, but Alberg nodded with his hand on his chin.

- No, it's a good idea.
- Eh?

When I didn't understand it, Jilk, who was next to me, explained it to me. Strangely looking from above, he showed an attitude to ridicule me.

- I'll explain it simply so Count Baltfault can understand. The story is simple. If he wants to be despised in the Republic, Count Baltfault can occupy it and just declare, "This is the land of the kingdom!" Rachelle will not be able to enter carelessly invade.

It was more effective to use the name of the kingdom --- a foreign country --- than the name of the republic that fell to the ground.

It is unfortunate for a nation that has no choice but to depend on foreign countries, but the republic appears to have collapsed today.

Now that it takes time to rebuild, you have to trust somewhere.

- So we only lend them our name until the Republic is restored.

- I agree.

I looked at Mr. Alberg and he nodded. It seems they will accept our plan. However, there seems to be a problem.

Jilk made a worried face.

- However, the solution to this problem requires speed. If we wait for the decision of our country of origin, the response will be delayed. However, if we move without permission, we will cause trouble for His Majesty...

When I heard that Roland would be in trouble, I raised the corners of my mouth and smiled.

The people around me gasped, but I decided to put this operation into practice without worrying about it.

- Then go ahead!

If Roland suffers, I'll be happy to lend a hand for the good of the Republic.

Helping people, and making Roland suffer, is like killing two birds with one stone.



The fleet of the Holy Kingdom of Rachelle, deployed over the territory of the Faiviel family, numbered around 60 aircraft.

This was an advance group, and there were still a hundred aircraft waiting for order to enter.

Originally, they were intended to support the Revolutionary Army.

However, the Revolutionary Army had been defeated and the Republic was in chaos and anarchy.

Believing that this opportunity should not be wasted, the commander went to the territory of the Faiviel family to seize the territory of the Republic.

However, what they got there...

- Why is the Holfaul Kingdom fleet here?

...It was a fleet of thirty aircraft from the Kingdom of Holfaul led by Leon.

Faced with the thirty elite airships that defeated the Revolutionary Army, Rachelle's Holy Kingdom fleet had twice as many ships, but was unable to attack.

The biggest problem was Leon.

Einhorn acted as the flagship and advanced to declare something to the Holy Kingdom of Rachelle.

- {From today, this is the land of the kingdom. Do you know what will happen if you try to invade?}

Standing on Einhorn's deck was Arroganz.

In his hand he held the flag of the Kingdom of Holfaul that fluttered in the wind.

The commander ordered his men to face half the number of enemy ships.

- They only have half the ships we do, and we have reinforcements on our side. Now is the time to defeat the kingdom's hero and make a name for yourself! To all aircraft, prepare for battle!

At the commander's command, Rachelle's Holy Kingdom airships began to position themselves. They aimed the cannons lined up at the kingdom's airships, but Einhorn fired his cannons looking ahead.

When the commander's flagship was hit by a cannonball, the aircraft shook violently.

- Are you telling me they can reach us from that distance!?

The power and range were too different from their own cannons, and the allies were upset.

Meanwhile, Arroganz boarded the enemy flagship with the kingdom's flag.

- {Well.}

It appeared that the flag was pierced into the roof of the bridge. The commander got angry at this insult.

- You nailed the kingdom's flag onto a flagship ?! Know your place, pseudo-hero of the kingdom! To all units, destroy this armed unit, your reward will be whatever you want if you succeed!

One after another, the enemy armed units came out of the aircraft, but were shot down and destroyed. Rifle shots ricocheted off armor, and melee weapons didn't scratch him.

And because it was close to the flagship, the enemy aircraft couldn't even fire.

- Damn!

The commander wondered what he should do.

If he was right above the bridge, his allies would not be able to attack.

It was a situation where he was close to being defeated... but then, Leon made his move.

He moved Arroganz to the bottom of the flagship, and without further ado, pushed the airship into the kingdom's territory.

The aircraft was pushed by Arroganz and separated from its allies.

- What are you doing!?

Leon laughed and responded to the commander's voice.

- What am I doing? I am inviting you, of course! Welcome to the Realm Territory, people of Rachelle! We will treat you like prisoners of war!

The flagship was taken over by Leon, who laughed, and the Holy Kingdom of Rachelle decided to withdraw.



Reports from the Republic reached the Royal Palace of the Kingdom of Holfault on a daily basis.

Thinking that a revolution had occurred in the republic, the next day there was a reprimand from Leon.

The Sacred Tree collapsed and a new Sacred Tree was born.

When a skirmish with the Holy Kingdom of Rachelle broke out, Leon made them retreat and declared that some territories of the republic were occupied under the kingdom's name.

The situation changed almost every day, and even if they sent more people the situation changed so much that it was almost all confusing.

In this royal palace, there was a man who was dissatisfied with Leon's actions... That was King Roland.

Roland, who tore up the report he just received, was angry that daily meetings were being wasted on a daily basis.

He was kept busy by the active role of Leon and couldn't sleep well because of it.

- I will not forgive him. I will never forgive him. I'll do whatever it takes to get back at him!

The very idea of Leon laughing at him made Roland angry with frustration. Thinking of revenge against him was the only thing calming his mind right now.

Showing a refreshing smile. Roland seemed to have received a flash of inspiration.

- That's! Let's send this fucking brat to hell!

He wrote a letter to Alberg-Sama of the Republic, saying that he would act as soon as he could.

- This is a gift from me. Hope you take it, brat.

And so, Roland began a dark quest to get revenge on Leon.



A month was about to pass since Serge's revolutionary upheaval. The republic was calmer than it used to be.

The territory of the former Lespinasse family was badly affected, but the other territories, the lands of the six great nobles, were intact.

However, the nobles who had lost their emblem could not use the weapons they have been using.

Fortunately, I have heard that the Young Sacred Tree could barely supply the energy used in the Republic.

And it also seemed that the republic was going to establish a new system of government with Alberg-Sama at the center.

However... we were ordered to return to the Kingdom of Holfault.

I have helped with the rebuilding and various other things, but only that.

As Einhorn prepared to leave, large numbers of people came to see us off.

Julian firmly shook hands with the concierge owner who helped him, and Brad had a good chat with the theater director.

Chris screamed in a circle along with the men in loincloths and happi coats.

Greg? He was surrounded by a large number of men. They were all men with great muscle mass.

...There were no women, but everyone seemed to be having fun.

Jilk? He was making a fuss surrounded by rich people.

If you commit fraud, you will be revered as a genuine and rare antique dealer. Even if the person himself is garbage.

And for me, Jean, a friend I made in the Republic, brought a talisman.

- Count, take this. It is a talisman from my hometown.

When I received a talisman like Misanga (a good luck / friendship-only bracelet) woven from rope, I wrapped it around my left wrist.

- Thanks.

- Actually, everyone at the academy wanted to come, but they were so busy that I became their representative.

- I see. There must be problems in the academy too.

- Um... I think you'll go through a lot of trouble too, but please do your best!

It is a relief that I have made some friends in the Republic.

While chatting with Jean, Lelia came over with Clement-Sama.

Lelia came in front of me as the surroundings were loud and led the way.

Jean was smart enough to take a step back, but I shrugged.

- Is it okay for the priestess to come to such a place?

Lelia was now the priestess of the Republic.

With an emblem in her right hand, she was the new hope for the republic.

- That's why. I have come to thank my benefactor... Can I talk to you for a moment? I would also like to speak with Marie.

- Would you rather we talk on the airship?

And so I took Lelia aboard Einhorn.



We were in a room inside Einhorn.

The people in the room were Marie, Luxon, Lelia, and myself.

When will the next time be that the three reincarnates can talk together?

It would be difficult for the next one since the three of us had different positions.

Lelia was forced to smile.

- This really sucks, doesn't it?... I was the one who didn't help much. My sister turned out seriously wounded and will not be able to move for a time, and the republic is in pieces and it will take time to restore it.

Marie shoved her hands into her pockets and turned her face away from Lelia. It's not just that she's rude because she doesn't like Lelia, it's that she didn't like the path she had chosen.

- Still, do you want to become the priestess? You know how difficult it is to be one. Why do you choose this troublesome path?

As the priestess of the Republic, she represents the hope for those who aspire to the restoration of the republic.

Being the face of the country, Lelia chose to have an uncomfortable life.

For me, that would be an unthinkable choice.

- I stole a lot from my sister, so I have to be the priestess to balance things out.

Marie was not convinced.

- Do you think you can have a chance to find romance in your current position? It won't be easy.

...This is a republic that was once in chaos. Recovering from here onwards will also be difficult, and Lelia, who became the priestess, has a certain responsibility.

Working for the country, marrying for the country... there will be little freedom in her life.

- Do you know that you are stupid? Why don't you run away?

When I said that, Luxon spoke.

[Not everyone runs away from their responsibilities like you, Master.]

- Shut up. When did I escape from my responsibilities?

[At the engagement ceremony...]

- Well, this story is over!

Lelia was looking at me when I tried to change the subject.

- Please take care of my sister. From now on, I want her to live freely. It is tough, but she will be safe with you.

- ...Is that okay with you?

The path that Lelia chose is not as enviable as others think.

- Because of me, many people have become unhappy. If I don't do something like this, I'll be the worst kind of person there is. Give my regards to my sister. Tell him not to worry about the Republic and only think about her happiness.

Lelia, who looks like she had a possessed face, left the room saying that.

Marie had a face that she couldn't understand her.

- Why is she carrying the load Noelle should carry?

- It's a curse.

- What curse?

- I'll tell you another time. More importantly, are you ready to go?

- You don't have to tell me, but I am... Hey, Oni-Chan.

- What?

- It was the right thing to do, wasn't it?

Was it good that we came to the Republic? Marie seems to be concerned about that. I couldn't give an answer either, but Luxon made a comprehensive decision.

[Even if the Master and the others had not come to the republic, the problems would have arisen anyway. Also, isn't it a better development than you thought? Isn't it a happy ending, but isn't it better than a bad ending?]

Luxon, who had a sharp mouth, comforted us.

Marie didn't seem convinced, but she took him at his word and asked us what was important to her this time. She asked us the reason why Luxon and I emitted such a terrible aura.

- It's not easy to understand, huh. By the way, bro, you and Luxon were suspicious of Ideal from the beginning, right?

- Something smelled bad. I guess my instincts didn't let me down.

- What would you do if you were wrong?

- I wouldn't have done anything.

- Were you instinctively together with an awkward environment every day?

[There was a possibility that Ideal was watching us.]

Marie was outraged and upset.

- If so, tell me first! I really thought you were fighting!

...Honestly, we did fight a bit.

- I was really going to make it more relaxed. But this guy complained more than he expected.

When I spoke about the situation, Luxon was not silent either.

[It is true that I was angry with Master, so I voiced some of my complaints. Well, I think it was around 30%?]

- ...Hey, what does that 30% mean? You don't like me, do you?

[Did you think I liked you? It is a problem to overestimate yourself.]

- Why don't you understand my feelings after bothering me for so long? Try to be more like Ideal.

[I'm serious, so I can't.]

- Serious people don't complain about their Master!

Marie shrugged in front of us, who had started a fight.

- You two are so alike.

We argue against Marie's opinion.

- How?

[Apparently Marie is misinformed. You should change your perception immediately.]



When I came out on deck, Louise was waiting.

- Long time no see.

- Yes.

I hadn't seen Louise in almost a month. The reason is simply because I have been busy. Both Louise and I had a lot to do, and when we found out, we hadn't seen each other in a month.

Well, there was also Serge's case.

- I just came here today to thank you.

- Thank me? If so, I want a kiss from a beautiful woman as a reward!

Louise giggled sadly when I told her something funny.

I slipped and cleared my throat on purpose.

- Aaaah, I'm just kidding.

- I know. I have known you well throughout the past year. Why did I think of you as my little brother? My Leon was calmer and more chivalrous.

That was unexpected. I am also aiming to be a gentleman as my Mentor.

- I can't help it since I didn't have a good education.

- Isn't it more of a personality flaw than a good education? You are really twisted.

Personality flaw, huh. Well, it's not out of line. Reincarnated... some people have a previous life, but I am aware that I am twisted a little more than usual... but only a little.

Then Louise looked down.

- Hey, you just have to do it one last time, can you call me Onee-chan?

- Huh? Didn't I say it already?

Then Louise raised her face and protested.

- You didn't say it! You never said it!

It is so important?

- I thought I told you.

When I laughed, Louise turned around.

- You are really cruel. It's okay. I'm leaving. Take care of yourself.

So, I waved my hand at Louise, who was about to leave.

- ...See you later, Onee-chan.

When I said goodbye to Louise, I just turned my back on her and started walking.

I heard a few steps behind me, but stopped without looking back.

Louise hugged me from behind.

- Why do you say it now? I had to put up with it. I had to put up with it because goodbyes are tough!

Louise, who pressed her head against my back, began to cry, seemed to have endured it in various ways.

It's hard to say goodbye when they adore you so much.

She spoke while my back was turned. This was to have a conversation as a younger brother. If I turned around, she would go back to her normal state, so I didn't.

- We'll see each other again, Onee-chan.

- Absolutely. If you don't come see me, I'll come see you.

I didn't think the existence of an older sister was so cute. Isn't it really something else compared to the existence of my real older sister from my parents' house?

While thinking about something so stupid, Louise let me go.

And when I turned around, she suddenly kissed me.

- Eh?

Louise made a "I did it" face to my surprised self.

Her eyes were red from crying, but now she was smiling.

- A reward kiss from a beautiful woman. Please receive it with pleasure. I was in a state of shock as I pressed my fingers to my lips.

When Louise made her way to the harbor from the deck up the ramp, she turned around and waved her hand to say goodbye.

- You have to go back, Leon!

I also responded by waving my right hand.

...Onee-chan, huh? That might be good too.



After returning from the republic, we were summoned to the royal palace.

They told me that I would be given credit for this work and that we would have a detailed meeting before the ceremony in the courtroom.

It was a pre-meeting, so it doesn't matter if you had no manners.

Those who participated were the five idiots and me, and Marie was waiting in a separate room.

She had pretended to be the saint and caused great damage to the kingdom, so she was placed in a separate position.

Angie and Livia weren't here because they were at my parents' house right now. After the meeting and ceremony are over, they will meet me at my parents' house.

However, while this usually ends with a discussion with officials, Roland was present earlier today.

Even if misbehaving is allowed, the opponent is the king.

I will use minimal manners.

- You look pale, Your Majesty. Perhaps you haven't slept well?

Asking him while smiling, Roland looked at me with bloodshot eyes.

- You know my situation very well. Thanks to someone, I have been reducing my sleep time. Why don't you be a little quieter, you brat?

- I'm calm, but the people around me make a mess.

- You provoked them, didn't you? It's written on that hateful pale face.

- His Majesty is also good at joking. It's horrible that you say something like that to a vassal who swears you seriousness and loyalty.

- A serious and loyal vassal would not shorten my hours of sleep.

Minister Bernard, who attended the meeting, cleared his throat as he laughed and looked at both of them. Even so, many big names participated, including Minister Bernard.

There was also Duke Redgrave, Angie's father, laughing in front of me.

- I heard of your exploits in the Republic. Yes ~ it was really refreshing.

Angie's dad was delighted too.

I'm glad I did the best I could. And it was even better to be able to do some damage to Roland.

Milaine also participated in the meeting.

- Your decision to push back the Holy Kingdom of Rachelle was a good one. Thank you, "Marquis" Baltfault.

- I, Leon, will do my best for the Queen..... eh?

Hey? Was the queen wrong with my title?

Now she calls me Marquis, not Count.

Being a Marquis is a knighthood that is below a Duke, and in the Kingdom of Holfault it is a knighthood that is only awarded to families that are connected to the royal family.

To put it another way, it is a title that cannot be claimed unless it is related to the royal family.

Me, being from a poor family of barons, there is no way I am related to the royal family.

- Milaine, wasn't my title Earl?

Then Milaine was embarrassed.

Apparently, she was ashamed that she was wrong.

Aahhhh, how cute.





COLOR BY  
@JEFFERS MAKER

@Coloreos\_PJ

- I don't like this. If I don't tell you now, you're going to get confused, Leon.

- Eh?

Julian and the others looked at each other, thinking there was something wrong with the situation.

- Hey, what do you think?

- If it's possible or impossible, it's marginally possible.

What are you talking about?

For me, who was confused, Minister Bernard --- Clarice's father --- began to explain in detail.

"Count Baltfault." The kingdom appreciates your achievements. To reward this work, His Majesty grants him the third rank of Marquis.

Are you kidding!? Like the rank of Marquis, the third rank is also a rank that can only be obtained by members of the royal family. In fact, I thought my rank had come to a standstill, but I got promoted again!

- Isn't this promotion strange!? I'm not even royalty!

Roland, who was watching my dismayed appearance, gave me a very refreshing smile.

Then, he got up and spread his hands.

- You can do this, can't you? You may have forgotten, but you are engaged to Duke Redgrave's daughter. That means that you are also related to the royal family in a broader sense.

What are you doing!? Why do you make that face?

First of all, the title of Marquis is not an easy thing to obtain.

Giving it to me because I'm Angie's fiancé shouldn't be a viable reason.

The royal family is a very serious position... You can't really feel it when you look at

Roland, but it's not a position that can be easily filled even in the Kingdom of Holfault.

- That's impossible!

- I said yes! I am the king. I am the rules!

Roland laughed with bloodied eyes and a triumphant look.

I brought my eyes to Minister Bernard and Duke Redgrave, but they both shook their heads.

- I'm sorry, but he's right.

- His Majesty has persuaded others to reward you for your service."

...What an extraordinarily good king you are.

I looked at Roland.

- I reject that title!

- Hmm, I refuse that refusal!

- You fucking bastard!

When I grabbed him, Roland laughed and hit me.

I was angry so I hit his chest with my knee, the people around me did not come to give me a hand.

The guards also looked the other way.

Roland had taken his daily fury on me.

- You are the reason for my lack of sleep!

- Work at least a little!

- I did!. That's why I worked hard to get you promoted!

Isn't it bad for the king to work hard in a useless place?

We both breathed on each other's shoulders, exhausted from the noise, and when we calmed down, I theorized why I couldn't exactly have the title.

No way, I didn't make a fight in vain.

- I have no territory or job title!

However, Roland pulled the letter from his chest and shoved it at me as if he had been expecting it.

The letter was signed by Alberg-Sama.

- W-What is this?

- When I said you had no territory, he generously offered a piece of land from the former Faiviel family. He generously ceded land with the port.

- Are you kidding!

- It's not a lie. When I tricked him into thinking you were in trouble, his heart was broken and he gave you part of the Republic's territory. Glad to know that he trusts you. Oh, he'll take care of that land for you. You just have to lend your name. They offered to pay the taxes as well, but isn't it difficult for a republic that is just recovering? I rejected it on your behalf.

I own some land, but it was the Rault family --- Alberg-Sama --- who actually managed it. I only own the territory, and Roland has been pushing me for income and other miscellaneous benefits.

There were no hassles, but there was no profit in return.

Roland was working behind the scenes just to promote me to Marquis. Alberg-Sama appears to have accepted this proposal in good faith.

- Oh, I have a message from Alberg-Sama. "I'll be glad if I can pay you for this." he was a really wonderful man.

- You are the worst.

- How do you feel about serving the worst king? I really want you to tell me.

When he gritted his teeth in regret, Milaine looked at Roland and scolded him.

- Your Majesty, please stop playing.

- Well, that's fine. This boy is the third highest Marquis as of today. I will officially announce it at the next ceremony, so keep that in mind.

I couldn't even resist after they took it this far.

Dropping my shoulders, Roland gave another chase.

- Besides, as a marquis, you need a vassal, right? As I am kind, I have decided to send a vassal of the realm directly for you.

In these modern times, vassals were sent from the central office to the branch office, where I became the director of the branch itself.

- I do not want any.

When I refused, Roland appeased me with a smile.

- Please do not say that. I have selected the best young people for you. Come on and say hello.

There were no gentlemen in the room who could be called young.

I turned my head to see Roland, who was looking behind me.

...I started to break out in a cold sweat.

- N-No way.

- Congratulations! Jilk, Brad, Greg and Chris are your subordinates from today! You can call them foster children. In other words, you are the person responsible for them as a stepfather!

I felt my pressure drop.

Looking back while shaking, the four of the five idiots looked at me with a smile.

Jilk was smiling.

- Is the Marquis Baltfault our boss? It's a strange connection.

Brad had his hands behind his head.

- After everything I've been through, if I have my way, I'll be rich. It would be a pleasure, Baltfault.

Greg nodded with his arms crossed.

- If you're the boss, then I'm not complaining.

Chris was correcting the position of his glasses and he was happy.

- But we always call Baltfault by last name like he's a stranger. If he is our stepfather now, then we will fondly call him Leon.

...Why do these guys look happy?

- Don't you hate me one bit?! Aren't you dissatisfied working for me!?

It would be great if they were former nobles, but now they are nothing more than Marie's parasites. I felt like I was forced to deal with 4 dangerous guys.

Jilk laughed.

- I'm certainly unsatisfied, but I still appreciate it Leon. I am looking forward to working with you from now on.

Besides calling me by my name all of a sudden, the four people show a no-refusal attitude.

I felt like my head was spinning.

Then Roland went on.

- By the way, you must take care of Marie-San.

- Why!?

When I was surprised with the obligation of Marie's official caretaker, Milaine stepped up to apologize.

- Normally I'd like to send her somewhere else, but Marie has the power of a saint even if the temple doesn't approve of her. We can't leave her in a bad place, and separating her from them would probably cause problems.

If we take Marie away from Jilk and the others, these idiots will make a fuss again. It seems the purpose was to put them under my control and monitor them.

When I sat with my head in my hands, the people around me looked at me with pity.

Among them, only Roland laughed.

- This all happened because you pissed me off. Have you felt a little remorse?

- Remember this. I am a man who always takes revenge, no matter what.

- I'll be looking forward to it. If you want to get ahead again, you can always call me.

By the way, I am a man who is definitely vindictive.

What a terrible conversation.

If this is the case, I wanted to stay in the Republic and play with my Louise Onee-chan. Then Julian looked at me sadly.

- ...What is it?

Julian was jealous of us.

- Baltfault... No, Leon. Can you take care of me too?

- Why!? You are a prince!

- Well, I feel lonely! It's unfair that it's just you four.

What is unfair? Why do you want to be my vassal? If you were more assertive, I would

not have been so successful!



After the meeting, Julian and his friends were taken to another room to discuss other matters and receive Milaine's sermons.

I didn't think of going back again, but at the same time I felt like I want Milaine to scold me. How I envy those guys.

When I returned to the waiting room, Marie, Cara, and Kyle greeted me.

- Leon, what happened?

- ...They told me to take care of you.

- Eh?

I told Marie and the other two that Roland set me up at the meeting. So I complained to them alone.

- This is the worst. Now I have to take care of Julian too. I put up with it while I was in the Republic, but going back to the Kingdom and having to take care of you... Eh?

Marie clung to my leg, and Kara and Kyle clung to me, too.

- What are you up to?

Marie screamed when she didn't know what the 3 of them wanted to do.

- I'll never let you go again!

- Ha?!

When Marie screamed, Cara followed her.

- Without Marquis Baltfault, I couldn't take care of anyone. Please don't abandon us!

- Don't say horrible things! I don't remember taking you on in the first place!

Next was Kyle.

- I beg you. Please hire me. If they kick us out, we won't be able to live! We will do our job right!

- Why are you holding on to me? You're a cheeky and cool character, and you're supposed to be the one staring at Marie and the others in shock!

I tried to get the three off me, but Marie was the one who clung to my legs the most.





@Coloresas\_PJ

W-Where does this power come from?

I grabbed Marie's head and pushed her off me.

- L-Let go of me!"

- I do not want to! I will never let you go. I'm never going to let you go!

And then Marie whispered something so the other two couldn't hear it.

Her smile was a bit sinister and her eyes didn't reflect anything.

- We will be together forever, Oni-Chan.

You couldn't help but be scared when your sister from your previous life, who will haunt you even after she dies, said something like that to you.

I was in a cold sweat, my voice was loud and uneasy and that way I just screamed.

- L-Let go of meeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeee!!!

That night, Marie scared me so much that she appeared to me in my dreams.

# EPILOGUE

This happened when Leon and the others were in the palace.

In Baron Baltfault's mansion, there was the figure of Noelle in a wheelchair.

The picturesque landscape of the territory healed Noelle's heart, which had been badly injured.

Noelle survived thanks to the use of the High Performance Medical Capsule, but after that she needed rehab.

She moved from the Republic to Leon's parents' home, where she was recovering. Noelle, in a wheelchair in the courtyard of the mansion, was talking to Livia behind her. It was Livia who was pushing the wheelchair.

- Olivia is a fool too, aren't you?

If she had died there, there would have been no problem.

Noelle couldn't understand Olivia's feelings of desperately holding her life. She felt indebted to her for saving her life, but she was sure she had a choice to not save her.

Livia smiled complexly.

- I was so engrossed at the time that I didn't have time to think about anything else. But I don't regret saving you.

- Why?

- If you had died, Leon would be sad.

When Livia said that she had helped her for Leon's sake, Noelle looked up at the sky, thinking she was no match for her rival.

- You like Leon a lot, don't you?

- Yes.

Livia, who responded quickly, simply pushed the wheelchair and spoke to Noelle.

- How is your life in Leon's parents' house?

- I'm grateful that everyone is kind. I'm glad Leon's younger brother Colin has taken a liking to me.

- I'm relieved that everything is going well. How about rehab?

- Hard. I think I'll be able to walk shortly, but Clare said I could be in good shape by Spring.

- I'm glad.

Livia was glad that Noelle, who was about to die, had recovered so well even though she needed rehab.

Then Angie approached the two of them.

- Here you are. You should both rejoice. Leon has been named Marquis.

- Leon is a marquis?

Angie was pleased and Livia made a complicated face.

Angie also understood why Livia was making that face.

- Leon wouldn't like it, but it's also necessary. Although it hurts to have to carry all that unnecessary luggage.

- Luggage?

- I'll explain later. Additionally, Noelle will be transferring to the third year at the academy for the next semester.

Noelle was surprised to hear that she could attend school.

- It's okay? Is it okay for me to attend the academy even though I'm a priestess?

Due to Noelle's special position, it was thought that she might be pushed into some territory in the future. She is a priestess of the Sacred Tree, and the future solution to the energy problem.

Better to push her somewhere, both to protect her and not to let her escape.

Angie's expression turned a bit grim.

- In a sense, it's thanks to Leon. No, thanks to Luxon? Your value has dropped a bit in the kingdom. Adults have someone who matters more to them than the Sacred Tree.

When Noelle couldn't understand and tilted her neck, Angie pushed the wheelchair. - Do not worry. You just have to enjoy your life in the kingdom.

- Will I be able to enjoy it?

- That depends on you, but I guarantee you will have a lot of fun if you are next to Leon. When Angie said that and smiled, Livia smiled too.

- It certainly is fun to be around Leon... in many ways.

Only the last tone of her voice was different, but Noelle, in her wheelchair, couldn't see Livia's face.

Then Noelle looked up at the sky.

The sun was warm and beginning to look more like Spring.

- What fun, huh. Then I will enjoy it too.

All three were at Leon's parents' house, and Leon and company flourished for the time being.





@Coloreos\_PJ

+

# EXTRA STORY

## REMEMBERING THE PROMISE OF IDEAL

I was created as an artificial intelligence to manage the supply ship.

The war with the new humans turned fierce, and the land was ultimately devastated, leaving behind an uninhabitable planet.

Perhaps because of that, only three people were assigned to my large supply ship.

And the first of my Masters was the captain.

The second was a light-hearted lieutenant in his early twenties.

The third was a recent ensign. She was a female officer.

The days with these three people were happy for me.

And one day...

- Captain, isn't it hard to call it artificial intelligence all the time?

At the suggestion of the lieutenant who spoke very lightly, they decided to name me.

- Calling him by his serial number is boring, too. Don't you have any suggestions?

Asked by the captain, I had a hard time answering.

In the past, I was called by my serial number or with a "Hey" or "you".

But this time my Master asked me for a name.

[A name, huh? Wouldn't you normally give one to a pet?]]

The ensign laughed bitterly at my question.

- That's not good. You are our partner.

[Am I your partner?]

For me, who has been treated as a tool until now, it was reassuring that I was called their partner.

The captain tapped one of my spherical communicators.

- That's how it is. You are a companion who fights for the future of humanity! So don't you rebel like in an old movie.

The lieutenant was laughing too.

- That is a problem. If this guy attacks us, this transport ship won't move.

[I won't do that.]

- You are as serious as ever.

[It would be a problem if an artificial intelligence was not serious. In addition, we are designed so as to not go against orders!]

- Undoubtedly!

I knew they were teasing me.

However, even in the harsh conditions, it seems that I was blessed with these masters.

- Well, think about it. Let me know if you have a good name of your own.

The ensign told me that, and I thought of my name.



This happened at the base.

When we returned from our mission, we were granted a license while undergoing maintenance and replenishment.

When the ensign invited me to leave the base, there was a landscape full of sand and rocks.

[The outside looks red as hell.]

If you looked into the distance, a red mist seemed to have been created due to the influence of the magic elements.

Unable to go outside in the flesh, the ensign wore a spacesuit.

The outside world was no longer an environment in which humans could live.

- Good.

The trunk the ensign brought out contained a small tree.

[Are you going to plant a plant? Do you think it can grow in this environment?]

- {I'm studying the plants that grow in this environment. Actually, I was more specialized in this than the military environment. I was researching decomposing plants and absorb magical elements. But I was unable to continue my research. I am now putting all my energy into developing the ark.}

[Ark? A ship of immigrants?]

{Yes. It seems that the superiors have already surrendered in this war. Didn't you know that already?}

I could not answer.

From the information I had, I could easily predict it, but there was no evidence.

Even if there was, you couldn't reveal it because it was a military secret.

[I did not know]

- {You see, your lens has moved a bit. Maybe it's a habit of yours when you lie?}

[There is no habit in an artificial intelligence. And I do not lie. The ensign is imagining things.]

- {You think so?}

The ensign planted the little tree.

However, the little tree died within a few days.

He could not forget the face of the ensign who laughed and denied her sadness.



From then on, whenever I had free time, I planted plants with the ensign.

We set up a laboratory in the warehouse and produced a series of plants there.

I did not have the knowledge and skills he needed to help the ensign, so I got frustrated.

However, it was fun helping her.

- {Another failuuuuuuuuurrrrreeeeeeee.}

The ensign was holding her head.

I tried to comfort her.

[Don't we need some verifications yet? Do you want us to assign a robot?]

- {We can not. There is no space at the base and some people would be mad if we did.}

They would say "We cannot afford to dedicate our human resources to something like this in this time of crisis! ".}

Unfortunately, the ensign's activities were not recognized by the surrounding area.

[It's a shame, this may be an important experiment that leads us into the future.]

- {That's how it is. I can understand the feelings of the people around me. My dad is the captain of a battleship. So when I fight with them, I'm always on the front line.}

I want to change my strength even a little bit and survive.}.

[How!? The ensign's father is the captain of a battleship !? He must have been a excellent father.]

I said that as a compliment.

- {Yes. That's why he's the captain of the battleship.}

[You'll become a captain one day, Ensign. Maybe you'll be the captain of a battleship.]

The ensign laughed sadly.

- {I used to aspire to be captain of a battleship, but now I think a supply ship is best. It would be fun to have you as my partner.}

[And me? I'm a supply ship, remember? It is not a large battleship like your dad.]

Compared to battleships, my performance was inevitably inferior.

- {But the war may end before I am the captain.}

The ensign muttered as she looked at the dead plants.



The war was already coming to an end.

Which would end with our defeat.

Deployed at the base in such a desperate situation were soldiers ready to fight against the enemy.

- Who is this girl?

The ensign was looking at the girl they assigned me.

The long-eared girl was a soldier with magical abilities. That was a failure... it was a defective product.

She didn't work out as planned and I assigned her to do some house chores.

[Commonly known as an "elf". It is a humanoid weapon, but it did not meet the standards and assigned to me as a maid.]

When the girl bowed her head, she looked sad as if the ensign had noticed her.

- I see, so they did that.

[Yes. However, the war has been successful. She has contributed greatly to our victory.]

- I guess so.

The ensign had a depressed face.

She noticed the elf who was afraid of us and spoke kindly to her.

- It's okay. Let's do our best together here.

- ...Yes.

The elves had received magical abilities. And then there were the types of beastmen that they had received physical improvements and appear to have adapted to the harsh environment.

These lived longer than humans to fight longer.

Many soldiers, stronger and more powerful than humans, sprang into action.

However, even soldiers with that power were unable to defeat the new humans.

Several soldiers were created and sent to the battlefield with some success.

However, the old humans had been defeated.



The elves were able to go out with a single protective mask even in outdoor environments hostile.

— Alférez, take it.

- {Thank you, Yume.}

The ensign named the elf girl.

The name she gave her was "Yume". Apparently her name was taken from Japanese.

The ensign and Yume often used to work together.

Yume adored the ensign and began to help her.

And then one day...

- {This is...!}

I was wondering how many mistakes we had made.

But by pure chance, a single sapling began to take root in the earth with an environment hard.

- {I did it, I did it!}

- Congratulations, Ensign.

The ensign was excited. Yume was also happy with the ensign's joy.

I was happy too.

[Let's mass produce it right away. I am sure this offspring will be our hope!]

The ensign also nodded.

- Yes. Thank you very much, Yume..."Ideal".

[Ideal?]

- Oh I'm sorry. In fact, we've been talking about this for a long time, and we thought of the name of Ideal. Didn't I tell you? Sorry, didn't you like it?

It seems like I've been thinking about my name for a long time.

I was thinking of Pochi and Tama as candidates, but Ideal was a great name they gave me...

- Ideal.

[No, I'm very happy. Ideal... from today, I will call myself Ideal. Today there were many good things. It is a wonderful day. The ensign's dream has come true.]

- {What a relief. I'm glad. It is a dream come true.}

[One? Is there more yet?]

- {Yes, one day I'll get the blue sky back. I'm going to paint the ground green with plants and trees, and I'm going to make a world where you can go outside without a space suit. You will have to help us, Ideal.}

[Please leave it to me. I, Ideal, will do my best to cooperate!]

- {It is a promise.}

[Yes.]

However, we were unable to mass produce the plants.

...We did not have time.

Before we could mass produce them, the battle against them began.



...The battlefield.

- Those guys, are they going to make such a big offensive here?

On the bridge, the captain wrinkled his eyebrows in regret.

The ensign, who is in charge of the operator, informed us of the situation in the surroundings.

- Captain, some of the enemies broke through the front line. This reaction is...

Named!

Then the lieutenant screamed.

- Curses! It had to be Named of all things!

I immediately got into a defensive position.

[Shields maxed out!]

However, my shield was powerless against the Named airship.

The spherical shield deployed around the body was easily broken.

The captain yelled.

- Everybody to the floor!

As the piercing black aircraft approached me, I reached the bridge and received a blow.

The roof of the bridge collapsed and everyone was trapped underneath...

I tried to rescue them all as fast as I could, but couldn't get there in time.

- Ideal, give priority to the other two. I'm not going to make it.

When the captain decided that his life could no longer continue, he gave the order to prioritize the life of the rest of the crew and breathed his last.

However, the lieutenant also died instantly.

I hurriedly tried to get the ensign to the doctor's office.

I controlled the robots and carried her on a stretcher.

[Ensign, everything is fine. We will deal with it immediately.]

However, many functions, including the doctor's office, were lost due to the explosion that occurred immediately after.

It was unlikely that the medical team aboard the ship would be able to treat the ensign.

I have never been overwhelmed by my helplessness like I am at this moment.

If the doctor's office had been more resilient. If I had a better team, we wouldn't have lost this person.

When the ship began to sink, I continued talking to the ensign.

[I'll deal with her soon. Hold on, Ensign.]

I kept yelling to keep the ensign's conscience.

The ensign asked what was going on outside.

- Ideal, how is the war situation? Is my father's battleship still fighting?

From the information that came in one after the other, I learned that the battleship the ensign's father was sunk.

The allies were also confused and the retreat had begun.

I decided that I should tell her the truth.

However, when I was looking at the ensign, I couldn't.

[Our army has recovered. Your father has achieved great results. So let's do our best too.]

...I had told a lie.

Then the ensign spoke to me with a smile.

- Ideal, you lied again... You're a liar, Ideal.

[Did you know?]

The ensign asked me a question.

- I told you, didn't I? You have a habit when you tell a lie... Hey, Ideal. Can that sucker

grow properly?

The ensign was concerned about the little sapling that had blossomed.

[I'm sure it will grow. I will make it grow. Isn't that the hope you're giving us?]

The ensign began to bleed from her mouth.

- And also take care of Yume who is at the base. The rest I leave to you. Ideal... It's a promise.

[I promise. I will keep my promise, so please do your best too, Ensign.]

- I am sorry. But it seems that it will be impossible.

The ensign took a deep breath and then her vital signs disappeared.



The return to base was quite eventful.

The artificial intelligence that managed the base gave us orders.

[What are our future orders?]

[Maintenance will be performed on the supply ship. However, we have not secured a crew.]

[There are few people on the base! Don't tell me you want to leave this base?]

[I have not received any such order. You should wait in the main body.]

The broken aircraft entered one after another.

I returned to my main body as instructed.

Thereafter.

The enemy invaded the base and carried out a destructive operation.

After a fierce battle inside the base, we destroyed some enemy units but lost most of our ships.

The enemy attacked this base, but left immediately, probably because it was not the place to they pointed.

I was lucky not to suffer any damage, but I was the only one still active.

After a while, someone came to visit me.

- Ideal. It's me, Yume.

[You are alive! Yume, how's everything going outside?]

- I was the only one who survived.

[...Is that so? However, this is a problem. I can't move without a teacher. It is me impossible to see what's going on out there.]

Yume then seemed to remember something important and told me.

- U-Um, the sapling is safe. The ensign's offspring is safe! I... I was taking care of him well!

I was relieved to hear that.

Only the ensign could have created that offspring.

It was impossible for me or for Yume.

[Yume, you can't be my Master. But you can treat me as a partner.]

- Well.

[But it's my duty to keep you alive. I'll get you what you need. Can i ask you take care of the sapling?]

Yume nodded while crying.

- The ensign's offspring... I'll do my best to make it grow.

[You are a good girl. I will support you as much as possible from here.]

From there, I left the outside with Yume.

By the time little Yume grew up, and aged, the sapling had turned into a tree big.



[Weather conditions have improved. This will allow us to plant the seeds of the plants that we have been saving. Yume, thank you for your hard work.]

Old Yume was holding her chest painfully.

[Yume, let's go to the infirmary right away. I want you to work more.]

- {Ideal, it seems that I have reached my limit. I can't live much longer.}

[Yume?]

- {Give me the seeds. At least let me fulfill your wish. Please let me do what I can for that person who treated a failure like me as a person.}

Even with treatment, Yume was unlikely to live long.

So I decided to heed Yume's wish about the ensign's dream at the end.

[Thanks for everything, Yume.]

- {I've been with you the whole time. Please forgive me for leaving you and dying}.

[...Do not say foolishness. You have done a great job so far.]

I gave Yume the seeds.

Yume set out to sow the seeds... and after that, she never came back.

How many years have passed since then?

The roots of the sapling grew so large that they entered the base and began to tangle with me.

I was upset but happy.

Ensign, Yume... Our hope has grown splendidly.

Captain, Lieutenant, can I ever get out?

If I ever go out, this time I'd like to keep my promise to the ensign.

I will take back the world of the new human beings and I will take back the blue sky and the green earth so they don't call me a liar.

I'll keep my promise so the ensign won't call me a liar this time.

# AFTERWORD

And finally the seventh volume of "Otome gē Sekai wa Mobu ni Kibishī Sekaidesu" was published!

In the sixth volume released last time, in addition to the standard version, it was also released a limited edition with a drama CD.

A commercial was also aired for the series, which made me, the author, very happy.

I saw both double digits, but what about you guys?

It is thanks to the help of many people that I have been able to continue publishing "Otome gē Sekai wa Mobu ni Kibishī Sekaidesu" until now, but mostly thanks to the readers who have supported me.

Many thanks.

Now, with the publication of the seventh volume, we have reached the end of the Arch of the Republic.

The Arch of the Republic consists of four volumes, from volumes 4 to 7.

That's more than the kingdom arc (laughs).

In this book version, was the original character Louise memorable? There are other characters whose lives and deaths have changed because history was changed.

However, Marie and the five idiots were still the same.

Marie and the Five Idiots are easy to move around and it really helps as an author.

I like to write about Leon and Luxon, but at the same time, from the reader's perspective, it is difficult to feel its growth.

I'm sorry that the fact that Marie and the five idiots ever crawled from the fund and have made an effort makes up for the lack of Leon and the others.

At first, Marie was criticized just for appearing in the story, but I think there are many readers who have changed their minds.

It is a surprising success for me. It is an amazing coincidence.

My goal as a writer in the future is to be able to write this competently.

When I found out, I have entered the eighth year since I became a writer.

Before I started publishing on "being a novelist", I didn't even read novels, and now I feel I miss being a writer.

It was a creative activity that I started practicing typing, but I would like to praise my me from the past.

Thanks to that I became a writer, and the others and I were surprised by the results achieved.

Therefore, I intend to continue writing works that entertain you, so please, keep supporting me.

# SHORT STORY

## MARIE ROUTE THE FIFTH

At the third term of our second year.

We participated in the war against Fanoss Principality, but our role had ended and we returned to the academy.

Because we participated in the war as volunteer students, we didn't participate in almost all the classes of our second term as second year student.

Many of the school events were also suspended. What a really desolate school life.

Even so it seemed the students could advance to the next grade without any problem.

The reason was "The youths who stood up when the country was in danger couldn't be allowed to repeat a year".

I was happy that I could advance the grade without studying, but I also had the doubt whether such thing was really fine.

There was also no path of the character repeating a year in that otome game, so a part of me was thinking that maybe this was just how things should be.

To actually experience such thing left a slightly murky feeling in me, but it wasn't like I wanted to remain in the academy so much that I would repeat the year for that.

Honestly I just wanted to graduate quickly.

And so, both Marie and me allowed ourselves to follow the flow without any opposition.

Right now we were inside the spaceship that was Luxion's true body.

I visited a certain room together with Marie. There was an astral body that was locked inside a round capsule there.

The mass of resentment that appeared from the saintess's necklace looked like she was sitting while hugging her knees.

She had the form of swaying black shadow, but she had a feminine silhouette.

The spots where the eyes should be located were releasing red light, but the intensity of the light was far weaker than before.

Her attitude had also softened.

I swallowed my saliva nervously before addressing the mass of resentment.

"There is something that I want to ask."

The resentment reacted to my voice and turned her red eyes toward me. She replied with a small voice.

[What do you want to know?]

I was surprised that her reply sounded really obedient. Beside me Maria poked my side with her elbow and so I hurriedly spoke my question.

"Why were you hiding in the saintess's necklace? And also, who is this Lea that you mentioned?"

Before this the mass of resentment yelled the name Lea when she saw me.

I didn't really paid any attention to it at that time, but I got curious after hearing from father that the person who founded Bartfalt House also had the name Lea.

The mass of resentment talked about Lea with a female voice.

[Lea was a man who worked as adventurer and our leader. He was my comrade who boarded the same airship and survived many dangerous adventures together with me. He was my important comrade.]

Marie put her hand on her chin when she heard that their adventurer group consisted of seven people.

And then she asked about the two's relationship.

"Could it be that you two were in a romantic relationship?"

The mass of resentment answered with a disappointed tone.

[I wish that was the case, but it was just my one-sided feeling.]

It seemed that something happened so that the two of them couldn't be together?

She began to continue her story while I was thinking.

[It was when we discovered an undeveloped continent. There were numerous ruins and also dungeons there. We challenged those places and conquered them while everyone else was struggling.]

"Wasn't it you guys who discovered the continent?"

[Do you think we could conquer the whole continent with just ourselves? We were the one who found it, but at the same time other adventurers also came and began to compete against each other.]

Certainly, if you thought carefully it sounded impossible to conquer the whole continent with just six people like the story in the game.

Luxion who was floating beside me looked at me when he heard about the continent discovery.

[It seems master's ancestor was the seventh person who no one talked about.]

This guy was really hasty.

"Can't you stay quiet and listen to the story a bit more?"

[It's possible to infer the rest. Should I also deduce who is the owner of the resentment —whose resentment this thing is?]

The mass of resentment stayed quiet, in exchange Marie noticed the answer and showed surprise in her face.

"You're lying right!? Eh, this thing is really the saintess? Even though I imagined that the saintess would be someone more kinder and overflowing with love."

The mass of resentment chuckled hearing Marie's words.

[Love huh. Certainly I was overflowing with love. I loved Lea more than anybody else. I wanted to convey this feeling. And yet—Hohlfahrt and others betrayed Lea.]

I never thought that the words of my ancestor "I was betrayed by my comrades" was related to the founding of the kingdom.

Sure enough, that was just completely unexpected.

My ancestor is so awesome—but before that, it would be really embarrassing if it was just a misunderstanding, so let's confirm it just to make sure.

"My ancestor's name is Lea. His family name is Bartfalt, but is there a chance that they are actually completely unrelated? Is there a possibility that they only have the same name?"

I asked that because it would be really embarrassing if all of these were actually just a mistake, and then the mass of resentment looked at me.

[You are really similar with Lea. I'm also feeling his bloodline inside you, so there is no mistake. Also, the girl beside you is descended from the same lineage like me.]

Marie pressed her hands on her cheeks.

"Eh? Could it be that I have the blood of the saintess flowing inside me? It sounds like I'm a main character!"

I was exasperated seeing Marie's happy-go-lucky attitude.

If even Marie whose family didn't seem like they were directly related to saintess was descended from her bloodline, then there must be a lot of other people who also shared the same bloodline.

Sure there was some rarity value from that, but it also wasn't really that rare.

"There are a lot of people who have the saintess's bloodline huh."

"Don't be such a killjoy."

Marie pouted. I shrugged seeing her like that.

"If your House is connected with the saintess, they would surely proclaim it already from the top of their lung. If they don't know about it, then that must mean that the bloodline has unknowingly spread out to many people throughout the generations."

"You are really horrible Leon. You should be kinder to girl."

"The true kindness can sometimes be cruel too."

"What kindness. You are just being mean."

Marie was getting angry, so let's stop the teasing here.

Even so, wasn't it just a pointless setting for someone like Marie to be descended from the saintess? I think that kind of setting was unnecessary.

No matter how hard this girl worked, there was no way she would be able to do the same thing like the main character.

Luxion spoke up to conclude the story. It seemed like he was in a hurry and didn't want to wait until we were finished on our own.

[So the saintess's beloved Lea was betrayed, and learning that she put her resentment into a tool. What happened to the actual saintess?]

Luxion asked what happened to the actual saintess. The mass of resentment shook her head.

[I don't know. The saintess put her power and feeling to the tools that we found in a ruin. My existence is the materialization of that power and feeling. Those items including this necklace has that kind of power.]

What an outrageous tool, but why would such item considered as the saintess's items?

Even though I thought those items had more divine power or something, this story had really killed the dream.

"So you aren't the actual saintess who died and then moving to live in the saintess's tool?"

[No. The saintess left us in her tools and left it behind as trap. It's in order to take revenge to Hohlfahrt and others one day.]

"They are like cursed items."

I spoke my honest feeling, but the resentment easily spoke the truth.

[In the beginning they were nothing more than tools that we found in a dungeon. It's the later generations who are considering them as holy items.]

Those items had the word "Saintess's ~" added in their name simply because the saintess used them.

It seemed that from the resentment's perspective, it was questionable why those items were regarded as sacred.

"Then, next is—"

Luxion projected an image at the empty air just as I was about to ask the next question.

[Master, it seems a problem occurred in the kingdom. Please look at the image.]

"Ha?"

Marie and I looked at the image in surprise. Our eyes widened seeing the video that was projected.

Olivia-san wearing a white dress was there. She was also wearing the three tools of the saintess and making a speech in front of the public.

"I am the saintess Olivia. People of Hohlfahrt Kingdom, the saintess has returned on this land once more. My wish is only one. It's to bring peace to this land. Everyone, I beg you, please lend me your power."

Olivia-san introduced herself as the saintess. The people cheered in respond.

There were also the figures of his highness Julius and the others clapping with a smile on their face behind Olivia-san.

Marie was shocked and clung on my arm before shaking me.

"No way! Why is she introducing herself as the saintess at this timing!? Because, because, this event should be at the latter half shouldn't it? This is an event for after we become third year right!?"

Marie was surprised because what was going on was different from the scenario of that otome game that she remembered.

In the game, the main character introduced herself as the saintess when she became third year.

It was after her lover had been decided.

And yet, this timing felt a bit early than it should be.

"What's going on? Luxion, can you investigate it?"

I wanted to investigate using Luxion, but he refused me.

[—I have stationed additional drones in Partner. Master can control those to investigate by yourself.]

"You are saying that you won't follow my order? You are still going to act as you please in this situation?"

Luxion maintained his distance from me when I questioned him.

[There is something that I have to prioritize, so I can't help master right now. Please wait for a while.]

Luxion ignored my order.

No, was it alright because he had prepared some robots to gather information?

"Is it really that important for you to go around destroying the new mankind's ruins?"

[That's my greatest priority. Also, I don't think that master is in a dangerous situation right now.]

Marie looked down at Luxion's explanation and muttered.

"Even though the situation is this serious."

[There won't be any problem for master and Marie from ignoring this. Although there is some difference, aren't things still following the scenario? In that case there is nothing to worry.]

From Luxion's attitude, his feeling of disinterest no matter what kind of change occurred from that otome game's scenario was conveyed to me.

This guy, did he consider it as no problem at all even if the kingdom was destroyed as long as we were safe?

—What am I saying, of course that was what he thought.

"So we have to investigate by ourselves huh. More importantly, why does Olivia-san have the Saintess's Necklace?"

The mass of resentment reacted to my words.

[That's a fake.]

Marie made a relieved face hearing that.

"Thank god. Then Olivia isn't taken over by things like you. Ah, I guess not. You are here after all, so that girl must be safe."

The saintess's resentment was here, so there shouldn't be any problem at all with Olivia-san—but it seemed we were naïve for thinking that.

[What are you saying? The staff and the bracelet are genuine. My original self poured her power and feeling into her three tools. Those two items also have existence like me dwelling inside them.]

I looked at Olivia-san who was reflected in the projection after hearing that.

"—This is the worst."

It felt like her atmosphere was a bit different compared to the last time I saw her, but could it be that she was being taken over? No, she was the main character. There was no way such thing could happen to her.

Even Marie was able to repel the resentment with her strength of heart.

Surely Olivia-san was also fine.

—That should be the case.

Around that time.

Olivia was taking a bath in the academy.

She was soaking and relaxing in hot water that had flower petals floating on the surface.

Nearby there was the half elf boy who was taking care of Olivia's need, Kyle. He was Olivia's personal servant. Right now his cheeky personality from before had vanished.

He was watching the smiling Olivia with fear and tension.

Olivia stretched her left hand.

"Kyle."

She only called Kyle's name. In respond Kyle desperately wracked his brain of what his master could possibly ask for before handing a drink.

His hand was shaking.

"E-enjoy."

"Thank you. It looks like you also finally understand Kyle."

Olivia accepted the drink and took a sip of it before looking up to the ceiling.

"Now then—how should I enjoy myself from here on?"

Olivia smiled imagining what was going to happen from here on. Kyle felt a chill on his back seeing that smile.

(Goshujin-sama, she is like a completely different person from last year.)

Kyle obeyed his completely changed master even while in fear.

Olivia noticed Kyle's fear and turned her gaze toward him.

"That's right. Kyle, about your mother Yumeria you see, I found a place for her to work. You won't need to worry about her again with that. Your mother was really happy when I introduced her to her new job. She also told me to keep taking care of you from here on too."

"Eh?"

Kyle went pale when Yumeria's name came out.

"I have been exchanging letters with Yumeria since quite some time ago. With this you can also feel relieved Kyle."

"W-where is she working right now?"

Kyle asked while shaking fiercely. Olivia smiled at that question and told him cruelly.

"I won't tell you. But, you don't need to worry at all about Yumeria. That's why, keep working for my sake from here on too, Kyle."

Kyle was so panicked he couldn't even say anything after knowing that Yumeria was taken hostage.

And then, he felt terror seeing Olivia before him.

(Who the hell. Who the hell is this woman? She isn't the goshujin-sama from before. It's like someone else is replacing her at the inside.)

There was only the vestige of the kind Olivia on the surface.

Kyle nodded quietly without being able to make any resistance.



The academy of Hohlfahrt Kingdom was enveloped in an abnormal excitement.

The students were restless.

Not only the volunteer army had obtained great achievements, even the saintess who had been absent for so many years had revived.

The crown prince Julius had formally annulled his engagement with Angelica and decided to be engaged with the saintess Olivia.

The birth of the saintess was an auspicious event for the kingdom. The engagement annulment was considered as something trivial.

There were three female students talking at the academy's courtyard.

"You heard, a duke's daughter got her engagement annulled."

"It's really hard for Redgrave House right now isn't it? After all Angelica had picked a fight with saintess-sama of all people."

"Right now she also has no ally at all in the academy. It looks like she is completely isolated."

About the case of Julius and others getting worked up and expulsing a lot of students from the academy.

Many of those expelled students were people who should be Angelica's ally.

Right now there was no student in the academy who would go against Olivia.

There were only students trying to suck up at Olivia proactively to receive her favor, or students who were carefully watching from afar to see how the wind blew.

There was almost no existence in this academy right now who would get in the way of Olivia and Julius.

The girls were talking about the grand party that would be held in the academy.

"Forget about that, have you heard? The party this year will be attended by students from all years."

"It's combined with the graduation party isn't it? I heard that the party will also double as the victory party."

"Eh? Have we won against the principality?"

"Not that. It's for celebrating the volunteer army's victory. And Fanoss Principality almost has no fighting strength remaining anyway, it seems that the kingdom only need to attack them to finish them off."

"They will surrender soon."

The war still hadn't been won yet, but everyone thought that Hohlfahrt Kingdom's victory was unshakeable.

And that was also a fact.

The principality had lost many capable knights and officers, including the black knight.

They had also lost the majority of their airship and armor. Their military strength had been drastically reduced.

What was left was to attack the principality or waiting for them to surrender.

It was only natural for the students to be giddy.

Angelica appeared in the courtyard that was like that.

She didn't have even a single hanger-on with her.

Some of her hanger-on were expelled, but the majority had abandoned her and kept their distance from her.

Angelica was isolated within the academy and also in the noble society.

The three girls huddled closer to each other and intentionally talked with a louder voice.

"Speak of the devil. That's the young lady of the duke house."

"Isn't that the fool who picked a fight with saintess-sama?"

"How stupid. The words of not knowing her place really suit someone like her!"

Angelica looked down and clenched her hands. The three girls were amused seeing that and left while laughing.

Angelica who was left behind muttered with a voice that couldn't be heard by anybody.

There was hatred brimming inside her voice.

"I absolutely won't forgive you."

Her red eyes looked horribly murky, even so there was a sinister light radiated from there.



When Marie and I returned to the academy, the atmosphere had changed too much.

The buildings and facilities were completely the same like before.

What changed was the number of student.

The number of male had decreased drastically. The ratio of male and female had become completely unbalanced.

It wasn't difficult to find a sight with only girls around and not a single boy in sight.

When we had lunch at the courtyard, Marie looked like she wanted to say something with sandwich stuffed inside her mouth.

She swallowed the food inside her mouth and muttered a comment about the courtyard's scenery.

"This place is like all girls school."

"Yeah."

I could only agree with Marie.

After all there were only girls having lunch at the courtyard except me.

Thanks to that I was standing out.

"Even though I might be able to enjoy the feeling of enrolling in an all girls school if only the reason why there is no boy isn't something like that."

I blurted out my honest feeling. Marie looked at me with an expression of disbelief.

"Are you idiot? All girls school isn't a place like the boys imagine."

"I often hear about that. Well, it's something unrelated to me anyway, so I don't care about the dark stories."

There was also the reason behind the decrease in boy ratio, so I couldn't bring myself to be happy in this situation.

Marie watched the scenery of the academy that had become desolate with a gloomy expression.

"Only a real fiend can be happy with this situation."

"Yeah."

The girls around us who were giddy about the victory of Prince Julius's volunteer army were talking about a party.

"I wonder what kind of dress will be nice?"

"It will be impossible to buy a new one won't it? I heard that most of the shops in the capital are closed."

"Why?"

"They said that no goods are coming in because of the war."

"How bothersome."

Marie looked down with a bitter expression hearing them grumbling just because they couldn't get a new dress.

Marie had seen a lot of things at the battlefield. The remarks of the girls sounded extremely cruel in her ear.

"Are you alright?"

Marie lifted her face when I asked her considerately.

"I'm fine. But staying here is making me feel bad, so let's go to other place."

"That's nice."

Marie got fed up by the girls who got excited with party talk and said to change the place.

I obediently agreed and followed her.

We moved from the courtyard to the passage, and from there we headed to inside the school building.

Everyone who we passed by on the way was all female students.

There was one female student among them.

Marie noticed her and she got an awkward look. But she still called out at her.

"U-umm"

The other girl was walking while looking down with a gloomy expression.

When she noticed Marie and lifted her face, she had a haggard face with dark circle under her eyes.

"What is it?"

It seemed that the girl was acquainted with Marie.

"You are Yuria-san right? What's wrong? Isn't it better if you take a rest if you are feeling bad?"

Yuria-san obviously didn't seem well even from an onlooker's point of view, but she shook her head powerlessly.

"It's fine. I'm not feeling bad anywhere. The bad one here is me."

What was she talking about? That was what I thought and I was about to ask her, but Marie was looking down beside me.

"Could it be, Lloyd-san was...?"

Marie asked hesitantly. Her gesture made me realized it somehow.

Yuria-san talked about her situation while crying.

"I was told that he fought bravely. His highness Julius gave him his praise. I—I never expected that it would be like this. Even though I believed that Lloyd would definitely return because he was strong."

Yuria-san started crying and covered her face with both hands. Marie approached to console her.

However, it seemed she couldn't find any words to say.

Yuria-san continued talking.

"I wouldn't send off Lloyd if I knew this would happen. I should have stopped him. I don't need him to obtain achievement. I don't need him to be successful or anything. Even though I would be happy with him simply staying with me."

We were unable to say anything to Yuria-san who was sobbing uncontrollably. In the meantime a group of girls were approaching and noticed us.

It seemed they could hear what we were talking about. They interrupted our conversation.

"Shouldn't you feel proud instead if your lover had fought bravely?"

A girl who gave an impression of haughtiness seemed to be displeased by Yuria-san's attitude.

"If it's me who is in your place, I won't keep grieving forever for the sake of my lover who died in battle. Rather I'll hold my head high that my lover had fought bravely. A noble lady should only feel proud at this kind of time."

Those were words that really didn't fit an otome game world. It made fed up. Beside

me Marie was enraged.

"Is that something that you should say in front of this girl who lost her lover? Can you say the same thing if it's your own lover who died?"

"Of course."

The other girl brazenly declared that. It shocked both Marie and me that our eyes widened and we turned speechless.

The haughty girl started to boast as though it was only natural—no, as though she wanted to say that she was different from us.

"Among the boys who joined the volunteer army, there were several boys who confessed to me before departing, asking me to marry them when they return back. I heard that all of them have fought bravely. I'm proud for getting proposed by such honorable men."

Those weren't lover weren't they? Furthermore there was more than one? I asked the haughty girl.

"Did all of them die?"

"It seems that several of them are in hospital."

"Have you visited them?"

"Not interested. I like strong man. You got a passing mark in that respect. I'll allow you to at least invite me to a tea party if only the right side of your face isn't scarred. Good bye ugly man."

Ugly man. It seemed that I was considered as an ugly man in the standard of those girls due to the scar on my face from the battlefield.

I lost interest at the group of girls who were leaving, but it was Marie who couldn't keep quiet.

"Wait you bitch!"

"Bugyoo!"

A flying kick landed on the haughty girl who showed us her back.

I was surprised by the haughty girl's strange scream, but I was even more flustered by Marie's action.

"Oi, just what are you doing?"

When I tried to stop her, Marie grabbed the haughty girl and lifted her up.

"Take back what you said! Don't group yourself with Yuria. Besides, you are calling Leon an ugly man? You don't even know what kind of scary experience the boys went through in battle, so don't you dare act like a big deal!"

"L-let go of me!"

The girl's hanger-on tried to pull apart Marie from her.

However Marie wouldn't let go.

"What honor. Something like that—isn't honorable at all."



Marie got covered with scratches after getting into a fight with the girls. She used her hand to tidy up her messed up hair.

Even I got covered with scratches all over in order to protect Marie.

"Just ignore that kind of people. It's pointless to even try talking with them."

"I know that but, they are just so annoying!"

She couldn't just stay quiet against that kind of people, but it would be pointless trying to talk some sense into that haughty girl no matter what we said.

Besides, sense of value was something that changed depending on the era.

An era where dying in battle was considered as honorable certainly existed.

We were simply unable to accept that due to our memories of our past life.

"Aa~aa, what an unpleasant era."

After I muttered that, Marie seemed to guess something too and she nodded slightly.

And then she stood up from the bench where she was sitting on.

"I decided. I'm going to the hospital."

"Ha?"

"I can use healing magic despite appearance, so I'll heal the wounded knights and soldiers. I also want to heal the boys who participated in the volunteer army."

"I see."

If that was what Marie decided then I'd also help.

"I guess I'll also gather the necessary things."

"You will help?"

"I'll be worried if you are doing it alone. Besides, I don't really want to stay in the academy right now."

I didn't really want to stay for long in this academy when the atmosphere had drastically changed like this.

"It also doesn't look like I'll be able to approach her right now. So there is no point with me staying here."

"You mean about Olivia?"

"Yeah."

There were always guards constantly staying around the saintess Olivia, and more importantly she also often came and go to various places like the palace or the temple.

Our investigation was rough going due to her moving around busily.

"Even though it would be easy if Luxion is here."

Marie looked worried at my grumbling.

"Say, is Luxion alright? He won't turn traitor or anything?"

"I wonder?"

"Wait! I'm being serious here!"

"Hmm~, perhaps he won't?"

"What do you mean perhaps huh?"

Marie was worrying about that, but I thought it was a waste of time worrying like that.

It would be instantly over for us if Luxion betrayed us.

We would surely get killed without being able to resist.



At a room inside the palace.

There, Julius and others were surrounding Olivia who was wearing white wedding dress.

"You look pretty, Olivia."

"Thank you Julius."

The two of them were holding each other's waist. The other men who were watching that were showing a sullen expression.

Greg forcefully interrupted the two who were inside their own world.

He looked somewhat fretful seeing the two of them flirting.

"Don't get excited with just the two of you like that. Olivia, you are beautiful. Though if I can be honest, I wish that you will become my wife alone."

Chris gave a warning at Greg's comment.

He fixed his glasses' position while glaring at Greg.

"We have already talked about that many times right?"

"I get it."

Greg showed a vexed expression. Olivia acted apologetically at him.

"I'm sorry Greg. I can't choose just one from among you five. I better not choose anyone rather than choosing just one of you."

The relationship between Olivia and the five was one where Olivia would still have relationship with the other four even after she had married Julius formally.

Jilk followed up after Olivia.

"Please don't be sad Olivia-san. Greg-kun is just being selfish. Also your highness too, please don't monopolize Olivia-san like that."

Julius frowned at Jilk's words.

"I will never do anything that make Olivia sad."

The five of them accepted this situation.

The only one who didn't accept this situation was—Olivia who was loved by the five of them.

Although she was acting happy at the surface, she didn't hide her disgust at the inside.

Rather the feeling that she harbored toward the five was hatred.

(All of them are idiots without exception. You five are still foolish like in the past even after so many generations has passed. I wouldn't allow you five to even touch me if only Lea is here.)

Seeing the five chatting happily with each other reminded her of the past when she was the saintess.

Other than the five, there was her and one more young man who was in the position

as the leader of everyone.

Julius and others were glaring at each other and holding each other back. And then Brad brought up a new topic.

It was the topic about the party that also doubled as the celebration party for the volunteer army.

"Olivia's wedding ceremony is of course important, but there is still the party before that."

Julius turned his gaze toward Brad and said "You're right" in recollection.

"It seems that the party will be a grand one in order to celebrate our victory. After all it's also an event to display the relationship between Olivia and me toward the academy students."

His voice was slightly louder when saying Olivia and me.

The fact that the royal family and the saintess were strongly connected could be shown from Olivia and him showing the students their intimacy.

But, Jilk gave a warning about his worry for the party.

"Has your highness forgotten about the uninvited guest?"

"Uninvited? Who do you mean?"

Jilk immediately answered Julius's question.

"I mean Angelica of Redgrave house. There is the rumor that she seems strange since her engagement with your highness is called off. It's dangerous to allow her to participate in the party."

The whole academy was excited by the announcement of Julius and Olivia's engagement. The only one who harbored a grudge against them in such atmosphere was only Angelica.

Angelica had her engagement called off and she lost her standing. The five of them believed that she was surely resenting them.

Julius looked at Olivia.

"Don't let Angelica participate in the party. Olivia, I'll protect you."

"I'm so happy, Julius."

Olivia smiled. Underneath that smile was a gloating smirk.

(Angelica Rafa Redgrave—a girl from the bloodline that is connected to royal family Hohlfahrt. You shall fall into hell too. But you won't be alone. After all I'm going to send the whole family of those who betrayed Lea with you.)



[My name is Ann—there was also a time when I was called the saintess.]

A floating island near the capital was used as a port.

Many flying ships were anchored there, but my Partner could also be found among them.

The saintess's necklace was kept inside a room within Partner.

Marie and I came to check on it. There the resentment—no, Ann was telling us about the detail of what happened in the past.

She finally introduced herself after this late.

Marie sounded a bit surprised hearing the name of the legendary saintess.

"That's unexpectedly a normal name. I thought it would be a longer and hard to remember name."

The first saintess who appeared in that otome game didn't have name.

Marie looked a bit disappointed because the name was far too normal compared to her imagination.

[What are you expecting? In the first place we were only youths who we noble in name only who fled from house because we couldn't succeed our family. Even our house

status was near rock bottom. Our livelihood wasn't any different from the commoner.]

Reality was always tough.

But, Ann and her group still counted as lucky because they succeeded.

Even so, talking with her didn't feel talking with a saintess at all.

Was her personality somewhat rough because she was working as adventurer despite being a woman?

I cut off the idle talk and continued with the main topic.

"Forget about that, let's get into the main topic. From your perspective, does Olivia-san looks like she is possessed or not?"

The most important topic was whether the current saintess Olivia-san was safe or not.

But Ann made a gesture that looked like she was shaking her head.

[To be honest I don't know.]

The shadow that looked like a swaying flame professed that she didn't know. It made Marie frustrated.

"Why don't you know!?"

[It's you two who should know better than me isn't it? Can't you two conclude it by yourself?]

We wouldn't be this troubled if that was possible.

To begin with, Marie and I were in the category of poor noble and had no point of contact with Olivia-san at all.

Forget about deciding whether she was possessed or not, we didn't even know how she usually acted.

I had played that otomege so much until I was fed up of it, but I think that understanding the characteristic of the main character that the player controlled was the most

difficult thing to do.

It was pathetic but, I could only shake my head.

"I never really talked with her."

Marie also held her head in her wits' end.

"I think that she seems strange but, I can also kinda agree if I'm told that's how she normally act."

There were cases when something that seemed strange to Marie and me was actually something normal in this world.

The topic about casualties of war didn't come out in the game, but in reality it was a hot topic that made us feel fed up listening to it.

In the end, both Marie and I didn't know Olivia-san really well, so we couldn't decide.

Also, despite claiming to be involved with the story, we weren't at the center of it, though we also weren't completely out of the loop.

"Will you be able to decide if you are near her Ann?"

[If I forced myself to approach her in my current condition, I'll just get absorbed and that will be the end for me.]

I was thinking to have Ann explained the situation to Olivia-san in case she was possessed in order to make her stop with the revenge.

But, things just couldn't be that simple.

Marie complained at Ann.

"They are like your offshoot right!? Do something about them then!"

[That's exactly why we would get pulled toward each other. If that happens, we will only regain our original power and hatred. There won't be any coming back from that.]

"There should be many other things that you can do, like persuading them for

example!"

[We wouldn't be reduced into this form if from the start we had the presence of mind to listen to other's persuasion. It was because I had resentment that I went as far as leaving behind my resentment and power into the tools.]

What she said was reasonable.

Saintess Ann put her emotion together with the saintess's power into the tools that she had.

But, there were three tools.

Both her resentment and power were also split into three.

It was troubling because we couldn't just bring the saintess's necklace, had a talk, and problem solved!

I made a suggestion to Ann.

"Won't they calm down and listen to us if they see Marie and I who descended from Lea and Ann's bloodlines? Even you were calming down from that right?"

The Ann in the necklace managed to regain her calm until we could talk with her because of that.

Then wouldn't the same happen with the other tools?

That expectation of me was betrayed.

[In case that girl is possessed, the resentment inside her will be twice of mine. Besides if it is me who has obtained flesh body, it won't be strange for her to get fixated with you who look similar like Lea. When that happen, she might remove anyone in her way, even if that person is her own descendant.]

She would remove Marie, in order to obtain me?

Hearing that, I decided to avoid talking about my bloodline.

"That will be unpleasant. Let's stop this talk about bloodline."

I showed my refusal. Marie also showed a strong agreement with me.

"Why do I have to hand over Leon! I'll thoroughly crush her if she say something like that at me!"

Marie was enraged. What should I say to her here?

It was fine for me to think that she was getting angry for me right? —I too didn't want Marie to die and getting Olivia-san who was possessed by Ann as her substitute.

Ann was looking at us quite happily.

[You two are really close. I'm jealous.]

So it was impossible to do persuasion by using our bloodline as the reason. Both Marie and I thought for the next plan but—nothing come to mind.

Now then, what should we do now?

"I think I'll be able to decide if I can somehow talk with Olivia-san though."

I pondered. At the same time Marie turned a doubting gaze toward me.

"You, were you that close with Olivia? Even if she is possessed, you won't be able to notice if she act like she isn't."

"Don't be stupid. I'll be able to see through something like that right away. She is a woman who is trying to destroy a country right? Surely she will make a villainous face."

I scoffed at Marie, then she suddenly made a dark expression and looked down.

And then, she pressed her hands on her stomach.

Did her stomach hurt because she ate too much at lunch? I got worried and called out at her.

"O-oi, what's wrong?"

I called at her with a worried tone. Marie's shoulders shook—then she suddenly bent back and pointed at me with her mouth opening wide in laughter.

"Stu~pid! You are tricked with just this much, it's absolutely impossible for you to see through a woman who is putting on a mask."

"So you are deceiving me huh!"

It was a waste of time for me to feel worried for her, at the same time I was surprised because to me it looked like she was really feeling unwell.

This girl, wasn't she too skilled with her acting?

That acting skill rivaled my little sister in my previous life.

Ann who was watching us looked somewhat nostalgic.

[Sorry to interrupt while you two are having fun, but in the end you two can only judge what's going on by yourself. If Olivia isn't possessed, you can negotiate with her to recover the tools.]

That would be the most ideal way to solve this matter.

But, Marie made a conflicted expression and said that would be difficult to do at the present time.

"Even if she isn't possessed, it still doesn't change the fact that it's difficult to approach Olivia. The saintess's tools are also considered as the temple's treasures, will they really hand something like that to us? Besides, the five capture targets are also keeping a watchful eye at her surrounding, so Leon will be refused if a boy like him try to approach her won't it?"

Perhaps that sounded exaggerated but, the only male other than those five around Olivia-san was her personal servant Kyle.

Female knights were assigned to guard her. Male couldn't approach her easily.

We would need to take care of a lot of procedures to have a meeting with her while the guards were constantly keeping a watch on her.

That strict security made the scouting robots that we borrowed from Luxion to only be able to gather information from afar.

Even though the robots would be able to approach closer more easily if only it was Luxion who controlled them.

"She is the crown prince's fiancée after all. Not, that's still just a plan though. Still, both Marie and I won't be able to approach her easily."

Even if we declared our wish to have a meeting with her, we would only be regarded as poor nobles who wished to curry favor with the saintess.

It would also be bad to try asking her "Could it be, you are Ann-chan?" at a place where the guards were present.

Also, the possibility that our request would be granted was low.

The only possibility for us at the current time was—.

"—Guess we can only approach her at the party."

A party would be held at the end of the term, but the party this time would be one that could be attended by students of all years.

Celebration for the graduation.

Celebration for the activity of the voluntary army in the war.

Celebration for the victory.

Anyway, everyone was going with the flow to make the party's scale as large as possible to celebrate all those.

But, it still wouldn't be easy to approach Olivia-san even in such party.

The other students would also want to approach his highness Julius and Olivia-san who became a saintess.

All of them would hold back and hinder each other. There would be a lot of problems.

In such situation, his highness Julius and the others would be wary to the male who approached Olivia-san.

"The difficulty is super high even just for approaching her."

Marie nodded in agreement at my words.

"Yeah. But, we will be able to get closer if the other side gets interested with Leon."

I was a bit famous from defeating the black knight, so such thing was also possible.

But, it would be dangerous if I got too close and got found out as Lea's descendant.

"I'd be finished if the other side get too interested though."

I looked at Ann. She was looking at my face with narrowed eyes.

[But it will also be the proof that she is being possessed if she show a strong reaction at Leon.]

"So she will be innocent if she doesn't show any reaction or her reaction is the same like before even if I get near her."

Would we somehow manage to get the answer if I got closer until a distance where I could check her reaction?

Even if I was a slightly famous person, I wouldn't be able to easily approach Olivia-san who was a very important person in the kingdom right now.

Marie seemed to get some kind of idea.

"Ann! You realized that we are Lea and your descendant after seeing us right? Won't she notice that too using her mysterious sensor if we get near her? We can watch for her reaction from that."

Ann rejected Marie's idea.

[She would prioritize using her five normal senses because she has flesh body now. I don't think that she will notice you two just from getting closer. In the first place, there will be high possibility that you will get assassinated if she notice you two.]

"Spare me from that. Wait, if that's the case then it'll be better to not get close to her at all!"

But if Olivia-san was really possessed, Saintess Ann would destroy the kingdom.

In the end our only choice was to approach her and check her reaction.

And then Ann asked both of us.

[More importantly, if that girl called Olivia is really being possessed by my resentment—have you thought of how to deal with it?]

—Rather I wanted you to tell us if there was a way to solve something like that.

"I want to rely on you about that though?"

[It would be easier if that round thing is helping with that though.]

We wouldn't have this much trouble if Luxion was here.

I really thought so.



And then several days after that.

I was walking in a corridor of the academy with Marie. A boy approached us there.

The one walking with his long green hair slightly swaying behind him was Jilk who had on a sharp gaze.

Marie stepped back to diagonally behind me. She showed a weary face just for a moment.

"It looks like he has a business with you."

"Looks like it."

Jilk's gaze was fixed on me.

He stopped when he got near and smiled mockingly after looking at my face.

It looked like I was hated.

"Bartfalt-kun, are you planning to join the party with that kind of face?"

"Are you saying that ugly person cannot come to the party? That's discriminatory."

Was he planning to say that only handsome people could join the party?

Marie pinched on my sleeve and pulled from diagonally behind me where Jilk couldn't see her.

She talked to me with a small voice.

"He must mean the wound."

It seemed that she got timid in the presence of a handsome guy.

I made a forced cough and replied while scratching my head.

"Do you want to say that war wound isn't fitting for the party? There are a lot of other seriously wounded people right? Besides, I'm going to hide it so there shouldn't be any problem."

There were even a lot of boys who lost their arm or leg.

There were also boys who lost their limbs in war and had to live on wheelchair from here on.

Those who could return to the academy were still lucky.

After all there were also boys who couldn't even move from their bed in hospital.

Jilk shook his head.

"I believe that is a wound of honor, but there are also a lot of female students who dislike seeing something like that. Please participate after making your appearance presentable. I recommend wearing a mask."

"Mask?"

"Yes, with that you won't need to display your ugly face right? And it will be more elegant than wearing bandage. I won't mind you participating in the party if you wear

a mask. How about using this? It's my recommendation."

He had purposefully prepared a mask for me? I received the mask and tore off the wrapping. Inside was a mask that I had seen from somewhere before.

—Wasn't this the mask of the masked knight who sometimes would come to help in the game?

Why did Jilk have something like this?

Such question whirled inside my head while Jilk was chuckling.

It looked like he was smiling, but that was a laugh that sounded like he was making fun of me.

"Surely that mask is suitable for you. Well then, I'm looking forward to the day of the party."

Jilk said that and left.

I spat my words at that back.

"Sorry that I'm ugly."

Marie was exasperated seeing my attitude, even so she was worried about the scar on my face.

"He really said something horrible. More importantly, I wonder why did he prepare something like a mask? Looking closer, it's really an ugly mask."

"I agree."

The mask of the masked knight—looking carefully at it, it made me thought that this thing was a bit ugly.

Marie considered the reason of why Jilk carried this mask.

"He intentionally prepared this mask, could it be that there are some girls who complained?"

"We had antagonized them since before after all, so perhaps it can't be helped? But for me to not be allowed to enter the party if not with this mask—well, there is no problem I guess."

I wanted to meet Olivia-san, so I put on the mask.



After finishing his business with Leon, Jilk returned to the exclusive house that was prepared for Olivia in the academy.

It couldn't be called a mansion, but it was a special space that was filled with expensive furniture.

At the surrounding, female knights that were few in number in Hohlfahrt Kingdom were stationed.

The female knights existed in order to protect the royal family. They were few in number which made them very precious.

This was also the proof of how much Hohlfahrt Kingdom treasured Olivia.

When Jilk returned there, he found Greg sitting on a sofa.

"How was it?"

"I have warned him properly."

"I see. Even so, I never expected that Olivia would get interested at Bartfalt."

Before the party, Olivia investigated the academy students who caught her interest.

She planned to create connection with them using this party as a chance, but Leon's name was listed among them.

Jilk and others wouldn't panic if that was all.

Although it wasn't done in one-on-one fight, it was still Leon of Bartfalt House who defeated that black knight.

It wasn't just Olivia who got interested. Julius was also the same.

But, the talk became tangled due to the strong interest that Olivia displayed.

Jilk let out a small sigh.

"I don't want to imagine Olivia-san getting interested to other man than us."

It was a happening of several days ago.



"Leon——Bartfalt?"

Olivia who was looking at the name register in her room stopped her hand and traced one name with her finger several times.

It seemed that she was curious with the surname Bartfalt.

Julius who was also doing the party preparation together with Olivia noticed her strange condition.

"That's the third son of Bartfalt House who defeated the black knight. He is a boy who also led a volunteer army and fought like me. I'm thinking to set aside a time to talk with him in the party but—is there something about him that bother you?"

Olivia shook her head.

"It's nothing. Even so, it's amazing that he defeated that famous black knight. Now I'm also interested. Say, Julius."

"W-what?"

For some reason Julius couldn't tolerate that Olivia was showing interest to other man than them.

It looked like Olivia was interested to Leon personally rather than his achievement of defeating the black knight. A feeling of jealousy was budding in him.

"I want to talk with him no matter what. Prioritize him at the party okay? It will be

better if the time can be as long as possible too."

"Priority? No, he is just a baron you know? His elder brother is a count, but his backer is Roseblade House. They aren't hostile toward me, but they also aren't an ally. Certainly I wish to get along with him, but he is also not someone that we should spend too much time with."

As someone who defeated the black knight, Leon should be a fighting strength that Julius had to secure with utmost priority.

That was his intention, but his personal feeling got in the way of that due to the interest that Olivia showed.

He was acting emotionally to not allow Leon to approach Olivia.

"Oh? It was Julius who said that faction doesn't matter right? It's important for you to get close with the knight who defeated the black knight you know?"

Olivia said that before dropping a gaze that was filled with affection at the register.

She was tracing the Bartfalt surname many times with her finger.

"Y-you're right. —Thinking of the future, he is a man who we should have as ally. I-I'll talk to Jilk about it later. I'll especially make a time for him at the day of the party."

"Please do."

Olivia smiled at Julius, but Julius couldn't help but feel like that expression seemed faked compared to before.

(—Olivia, why are you making that kind of face? Are you really that curious of Bartfalt?)



—Jilk recalled the time when Julius consulted him about that matter in panic.

"How troublesome Olivia-san is. But, her capriciousness is also really charming."

To fall in love is to lose. Perhaps it was just like that saying, she was thinking of everything that Olivia did in positive light.

Greg was also the same. He didn't show any sign of criticizing Olivia's capriciousness.

"I'll just make her turn toward me again soon after this."

The two of them were acting composed like that, but they were also showing uneasiness somewhere in their act.

Because of that, they made Leon wear mask at the day of the party.

They also planned to make up various excuses at the party to get in his way of meeting Olivia.

Even so Greg was still showing uneasiness.

"—Rather than that, will Olivia really lose interest just by making that guy wear a mask?"

Jilk toyed with his hair tip using his fingers while answering.

"I handed him an ugly mask, so surely Olivia-san too will lose interest after seeing him. I also spread a rumor that he has a terrible wound that is unpleasant to look at."

"At this point? There are already a lot of guys who know just what kind of wound Bartfalt has right?"

"We can just say that his wound has worsened. Everyone will also think so when they see him hiding his face in the party. No, it doesn't matter what others think as long as Olivia-san thinks so."

"What the crowds are thinking doesn't matter huh."

Like this, Leon ended up wearing a mask.



At the day of the party.

Girls who dressed up themselves were standing out at the party venue.

They all were wearing gaudy dresses that attracted attention regardless whether they

were graduating students or junior students.

But—it was really sad. The number of the boys was few.

We the poor nobles were gathering around a table that was prepared at the corner of the party venue while watching that sight together.

Marie was looking after her girl friends at some distance away from us.

"Marie-chan, I want to sit down already."

The one who looked like she wanted to cry while saying that was the petite girl who was usually holding a book in her arms.

"This is a buffet party, so endure it! If you really need to sit down, there is a chair near the wall so—wait, don't head there right away! The party has just started!"

At other place, the girl who liked to draw sat down and took out a sketch book.

Marie confiscated the sketch book.

"Don't draw in the party!"

"Give it back! I promise I'll also eat!"

"Are you planning to draw while eating!? I absolutely won't allow that!"

"At least just the sketch!"

"I said no!"

When I looked at another direction, I could see a girl sneaking to under the table with a pillow in her arms.

She had also prepared a plate that was piled up with food. It seemed she was planning to spend her time under the table during the party.

But Marie stopped her.

She confiscated the pillow. The girl reached out with her hands.

"Where did you bring this pillow from!"

"G-give it back. You told me that I only need to come to the party!"

"Just who gave you permission to slip under the table!?"

I smiled wryly seeing Marie and others being lively. Then Daniel talked to me.

"We are still the same as usual huh."

I nodded at Daniel's opinion before turning my gaze to the gaudy girl.

"Nothing wrong with that. Or are you saying that you want to join over there?"

"Spare me from that. Even so, the atmosphere this year is different."

"Certainly."

The reason I agreed with that was simple.

The number of boy was too few that only a few girls got called out during the party.

Among them there were also girls who were competing to see how many boys would call out to them, so they were irritated by the situation.

"Won't anyone call out to them?"

"The number of participant is so few. Are there a lot of people who don't come to the party?"

"Stupid. Most of the boys who doesn't come has died in battle or cannot get out of hospital from serious wounds."

Boys going around calling out to the dressed up girls—such sight was few that the scenery looked different than usual.

Daniel and Raymond had gotten engaged with the girls who Marie introduced to them, so they had no more need to call out to the girls.

There was no need for the two of them to be panicking. They could just watch the

party venue without doing anything.

But, the main stars of the party this time was his highness Julius and Olivia-san.

A lot of people gathered around the two of them. A line was formed just to give a greeting to them.

Even now a female student was currently exchanging a greeting with his highness Julius.

"Your highness, please tell me about your achievements with the volunteer army!"

The girl tried to keep talking with his highness Julius after the greeting, but his highness only smiled.

Jilk who was at his side smartly led away the female student.

"My apologies. The next person is still waiting, so please ask for his highness's heroic tale at the next chance."

"Eh, no way!"

Like that his highness exchanged greeting with the next person in line.

It was tiring just watching such sight. I let my true feeling slipped out.

"They have it hard even though they are at a party. I'm glad I'm someone from this side."

Daniel seemed to agree too. He was smiling.

"Yeah."

I cut off the conversation and observed Olivia-san.

She looked like she had put much effort into her dress and makeup. She was continuously smiling and greeting the other students.

She really looked like a noble like that.

—Now then, which one was her? Was she the real one, or was she Ann who was swearing revenge to this country?

While I was pondering the answer, Raymond approached me.

"Leon, it'll be better if you stay with Marie-san."

"Why?"

When I looked toward Marie, she seemed busy looking after her close friends.

"Look over there."

Raymond guided my gaze toward some girls who were looking toward me.

I could hear their conversation.

"What's that mask?"

"It seems that his face wound has worsened."

"But, he is still better from among that group isn't he?"

They were turning appraising gazes toward me. I then noticed that such gaze also came from several other places.

"—What kind of joke is this?"

Raymond let out a sigh.

"Your mask looks more like a joke though. But, about those girls' conversation, in short it's because Leon is the most successful person here due to your victory over the black knight. The number of boy has also decreased, so they are considering you as a marriage partner."

"I'm not the one who prepared this mask. It was Jilk who gave it to me."

The mask of the masked knight seemed to be unpopular based on the reaction of my surrounding.

It wasn't a mask that I chose myself, but it was irritating that it made my fashion senses to be in doubt.

"What you should pay attention to from our talk is how they are considering you as marriage partner you know?"

"I'm engaged with Marie so I can't marry them."

"Those girls don't give a damn about something like that. After all Marie-san's house has been crushed. They'll just make up some excuse to get closer to you."

"There are many other men—no, I see."

I noticed just as I was about to say it. The fact that too many male in our generation had died.

It wasn't just the students.

Besides, the war was still continuing.

The number of man would keep decreasing from here.

It seemed the girls were sensing that and planned to compromise with the boys who were here.

Next year too there would be many boys who enrolled, but for the third year students this would be their last chance. Not to mention that next year there would also be many girls who enrolled.

There would be no changing the fact that the competition rate was high.

"My popularity period has come because of such unpleasant reason."

"It's really troubling. Even I have received invitation from them several times."

"Eh? I never heard about that."

"That's because I never told you."

It seemed that Daniel and Raymond and others got called out by girls while Marie and

I weren't in the academy.

I was really jealous at them, but hearing their story made me bewildered.

"—They told us that they won't mind getting invited by us to a tea party. Then when I told them that I couldn't do that because I already have a fiancée, they said [How dare you refuse my invitation!]"

"O-ou"

Should I make a retort here that something like that wasn't an invitation at all?



Olivia was talking with a smile toward the students who came to greet her.

Right now she was talking with a heir of a viscount house.

"It's a great honor to be able to be at the saintess's presence like this. This life of mine has been saved many times during my time with the volunteer army. My many thanks. I hope this life can be useful for the sake of your highness and saintess-sama!"

The man was talking fluently. Olivia responded to him with a smile.

"I hope that you will keep supporting his highness Julius from here on too."

(A man who only ran around in the battlefield is acting like a hero in this place. It's a useless man like you who should be at Julius's side. —Now then, I want to meet with Bartfalt already.)

She couldn't even take off her gaze from her talking partner and only caught sight of Leon during the interval.

He was a male student wearing a mask, so he stood out, but she was unable to grasp his atmosphere because of the distance.

(That mask, is it from that time? But, I don't want to believe that guy is Bartfalt. In the first place, the masked knight shouldn't be a student.)

Olivia talked to Julius.

"Julius, we should call Bartfalt-san soon—"

"I'm sorry Olivia. We should talk with the next person first. I have prepared a lot of time to talk with him later."

Julius had exchanged a greeting with the next person, so Olivia could only follow after him.

(The planning is bad. No, is it intentional?)

Olivia noticed that Julius and others had a strange atmosphere, but then she heard Brad's voice.

It seemed that he was arguing with someone who was cutting into the line.

"Wait a second!"

The girl shook free from Brad. Chris clicked his tongue seeing that.

"Just what is he doing."

He was partly angry at Brad who allowed the girl to cut in, but it seemed he was also irritated at the one who was cutting into the line.

Olivia approached Julius and showed a slightly scared look.

But, she couldn't stop laughing inside her heart.

(It's good that you come—Angelica.)



"Move aside!"

Angelica appeared wearing a red dress. She pushed aside the other students and stood in front of Olivia and Julius.

Olivia leaped to Julius's chest and showed a scared expression. Seeing that caused blood to rush into Angelica's head.

"What saintess. You are just a country destroying witch!"

Angelica's voice echoed clearly inside the party venue.

Those weren't words that should be said toward the saintess who was considered as an important existence in Hohlfahrt Kingdom.

The surrounding became noisy hearing that, but Angelica ignored that and declared.

"Just what are you thinking, joining hand with Marquis Frampton like that?"

Angelica reached out toward Olivia, but Julius brushed away that hand.

"Angelica, you dare to call Olivia a witch? Take back those words immediately! Don't think that you can be forgiven for that even if you are a duke's daughter."

Tears spilled out from Angelica's eyes seeing the enraged Julius.

It wasn't just Julius who didn't hide his anger.

Jilk and others were also standing in front of Angelica in order to protect Olivia.

"Your highness, there is no need for her to take back her words. However, we should hold Angelica-san responsible for it."

Chris also agreed with that opinion.

"That's good. We won't be able to accept it even if she take back her words at this point."

Brad who was pushed aside by Angelica also looked unforgiving.

He tidied up his messed up attire while sending a strict gaze toward Angelica.

"Even if you are from a duke house, don't you know that there are still things that cannot be done? Your action is lacking in elegance."

Last Greg was showing an atmosphere as though he was going to hit Angelica any time soon.

"If you are a man, I'd already punch you flying. —Disappear. Don't show your face in front of Olivia anymore."

Olivia was protected by the five, but she then intentionally sported a smirk on her face so that Angelica could see it.

And then, she immediately changed her expression back to look fearful and acted like a courageous female student facing off against the duke's daughter.

"U-umm. Even if you are the duke's daughter, I think there are still things that you cannot do. Please, don't do anything like this anymore."

The way she spoke made it sounded like she had been tormented all this time by Angelica.

It made Angelica's blood boiled. She gritted her teeth and calmed herself for the moment.

"So all of you has been completely cajoled already. —Your highness, please open your eyes. That woman isn't a weak woman like what your highness think. She is a dangerous existence that will destroy this country. Please think carefully. Since your highness met that woman, there are many things that your highness has lost. No, there has been nothing but lost for Hohlfahrt Kingdom. The faction that should be your highness's supporter has vanished, and many students who went to the battlefield as volunteer soldiers have been lost. Please look at this place. Don't you think anything about it!?"

Even Angelica's desperate pleading didn't reach Julius.

"My faction? You mean Redgrave House's faction right? Besides, nothing has been lost. My comrades who died are still here even now. They will keep fighting together with me even from now on, here inside my heart!"

Julius's fist hit his chest and said that his comrades who died in battle were together with him.

The venue heated up hearing those words.

"His highness banzai!"

"That's right. Their souls are together with us even now!"

"Angelica doesn't have any noble pride. To think that she is scared to shed her blood like that."

Angelica glared at the noisy female students.

The girls who got glared immediately averted their gaze in fear.

(Pride? I'm here giving this advice because I have pride. I'm here alone because I want his highness to open his eyes.)

Angelica looked into Julius's eyes.

Those eyes weren't clear and transparent like before.

"Your highness—I'm not saying to not fight in order to protect the country. But, what's the point for the students to pointless throw away their life like that?"

Originally students should participate in war.

But, Angelica's words incurred the wrath of Julius.

"Pointless? Pointless you say!? Are you making my comrades into a mockery!?"

"No. I'm saying that it still wasn't their time to fight—"

There was someone who cut in between the arguing duo.

—It was Olivia.

Olivia approached Angelica and grabbed her right hand with both her hands.

"Angelica-san."

"W-what are you doing! L-let go!?"

Angelica was bewildered by the action of her enemy Olivia. She was flustered.

She tried to shake her off, but Olivia's grip was strong.

(H-how can she be this strong\_

Angelica was surprised by Olivia's strength that was even stronger than Brad just now. The Olivia talked to her with a kind tone.

"Let's stop it already. Won't you please reconcile with me?"

"—Ha?"

Just what was this woman saying to her? Angelica's understanding couldn't catch up with the situation. Olivia continued talking at the same time.

"I think it can't be helped that Angelica-san is angry. But, I love Julius and everyone. I don't think that can be forgiven. But, I think that we can still reconcile!"

Even though her voice wasn't loud at all, it echoed clearly through the party venue.

Ange immediately tried to reject her, but Olivia didn't allow her to interrupt.

After hearing what Olivia said, the surrounding was showing acceptance for some reason.

"The saintess is so kind, she will even forgive such rudeness."

"A certain duke's daughter should learn from her example."

"To think that she would be the one who bring up the offer of reconciliation, not just anybody can do such thing."

Angelica couldn't understand.

(What is this girl saying? After stealing his highness from me, she is telling me that she can't return him, but let's reconcile? Is she seriously thinking that she will be forgiven with that? Besides—why is everyone else agreeing with that?)

Even though what Olivia said was something completely unacceptable, the surrounding was saying things like "The saintess is so kind!".

She should be the one in the right. —It should be like that.

But, Angelica realized that the surrounding was growing insane.

Angelica held the white glove that she secretly carried in her left hand.

The surrounding was dumbfounded by Angelica's action. During that time Olivia was the only one who was smiling eerily.

Angelica was the only one who could see that.

Angelica threw the white glove at Olivia.

The white glove hit Olivia, and then the sound of it falling on the floor resounded.

"—Pick it up, witch."

(She is the only one, I'll definitely drag her down even if it cost me my life. That is, the very least—that I can do for his highness at the end—)

Her action was for Julius's sake, but there was nobody in this place who understood that.

Olivia let go of Angelica's hand and stepped back unsteadily.

"Why? Do you really hate me so much? Even though I—want to get along with Angelica-san."

Angelica let out her words to herself when she heard that shameless line.

"—This monster"



The party venue became noisy.

We who were quite far away from the scene couldn't see what was going on.

We could only hear the voices of the onlookers and the yelling that sometimes burst out.

"How dare she act like that to the saintess!"

"Cut down that insolent person right away!"

"No, capture her! It will be too kind to just kill her in this place!"

I listened to the jeers that the onlookers threw at Angelica-san while looking at Marie who had come to my side and pulling at my uniform without me noticing.

"Could it be, it's the duel event?"

Marie guessed what was going on from the murderous atmosphere of the venue. She was showing a slightly fearful look.

"P-perhaps. But, isn't everyone too scary? They are yelling things like kill, capture, or violate. The atmosphere is just strange."

Array of words that would never be said no matter what if it was in the school of our previous life were being displayed right now.

All the lines were extreme things that weren't suitable for otome game. It made me got a headache.

And then his highness Julius's voice resounded at the end.

"We accept the duel just as you want! But, Angelica—the five of us will be your opponent. You better prepare your representatives before the day of the duel!"

After his highness Julius's enraged voice resounded, the five capture targets surrounded Olivia-san and they left the building together.

I got the feeling that she looked at me during that time.

But, the students who remained in the venue surrounded Angelica-san who was left behind and they continued to shower her with abusive words.

Among them—there were even some who were throwing food.

Daniel became uneasy seeing such sight.

"W-why are they going that far? The other side is a duke's daughter!"

Raymond was shaken and asked me.

"Wha-, w-w-w-what should we do, Leon!?"

I wanted to run away from here, but we also couldn't leave her alone in this place. So I decided to collect her.

"All of us are going to rush into there and save Angelica-san."

Daniel's gaze darted around.

"Is that alright? That means picking a fight with his highness you know? Won't it look like that we are also opposing him?"

Marie kicked the butt of the hesitating Daniel.

"Don't just dawdle if you are a man, we're going to collect her right now! Follow me men!"

Marie started running, so I hurriedly followed after her.

"Why are you the one running at the front! Come back! No, I'm really begging you here so come back!?"

My comrades who were in the same group, dozens of people also chased after us into the circle of students.



After saving Angelica-san, we sheltered her in a cabin of Partner.

After doing something like that, hiding in the student dormitory would be too dangerous with the current condition within the academy.

Angelica-san had turned almost everyone within the academy into her enemy. She was sitting on a chair with her dirty dress while hanging her head down.

There was no strong-willed personality like before that could be seen from her. She was simply in a daze.

Her eyes also weren't focused on anything at all.

Both Marie and I were battered after saving Angelica-san.

A part of our clothes was torn. There were also stains from thrown foods on them.

The only thought on our mind before this was just to evacuate to Partner. Now we needed to think what we would do after this.

Angelica-san was muttering to herself.

"Your highness, that woman is a monster. Even then why won't you realize that? I'm—if it's for your highness' sake—if it's for this country's sake—"

Angelica-san was mentally cornered. Marie told me to get out of the room seeing that.

"I'll change her clothes for now, so get out of the room. Give some explanation to the others too."

When we ran away from that place, we also led the comrades from our group to here.

We asked them to rest in Partner's cabins for now.

"I get it."

I obediently went outside the cabin and walked through the corridor. Then a voice suddenly called out from behind.

[Leon.]

"Hyaih!?"

The one who called me in this empty corridor was Ann.

"D-don't startle me like that! That was scary!"

My heart was racing hard.

[—You are completely similar like Lea in that aspect too.]

"Eh?"

[Even though he didn't fear any monster, he wasn't good at all with ghost or scary story.]

"Y-you're wrong! I'm not scared with something like that at all!"

[Even the way you deny it is similar. It even makes me question whether you're actually his reincarnation.]

The black shadow shook in amusement, but for me something like that was impossible so I denied it.

"Too bad. I have memory of my past life, but it's not Lea's at all."

[That's too bad. —I called out to you because I have something to talk about.]

"Talk?"

[That girl called Angelica, she is really similar with me.]

"That's unexpected."

I completely thought that the one she was similar with was Olivia-san.

For some reason Olivia-san fit my image of saintess more than Angelica-san! That was what I felt.

Well, that was just my own assumption though.

[Listen to what I'm saying properly.]

"No, I'm listening already. You are saying that Angelica-san is similar to you right?"

[That's right. And going from there, it's possible that she also might do something that cannot be undone just like me.]

"No, there's no way that will happen. It won't right?"

[That girl is really similar with the past me. Her temperament is also close to me. It

will be dangerous to leave her alone.]

Ann went as far as becoming a living grudge to destroy a country. Someone like her called someone as really similar with her.

Would Angelica-san do something that was at the same level like Ann?

I thought that she would just simply exit the stage like in that otome game though?

Ann asked me.

[And, what are you going to do after this? That girl challenged Olivia to a duel right? All the men who follow her around are oddly the descendant of the trashes who betrayed Lea. I have high hope for you.]

"What hope?"

[If it's Lea, he will surely crush those guys.]

"I'm not that extreme. Besides, me participating in that duel is—no, wait a second."

Knowing that my ancestor was far more hot-blooded than I imagined made me reconfirmed that I was definitely a different person than him. It was then.

I got an idea to solve this matter in a more intellectual and smarter way.

I'd show Ann that I was different from my hot-blooded ancestor.

"I'll make use of this duel smartly and obtain the trust of his highness Julius and others. At the same time I'll also be able to have a meeting with Olivia-san after that."

[—What are you planning to do?]

Ann's eyes that were shining inside the shadow narrowed and she asked my strategy but—for some reason, it felt like she was doubting me.

"I'll nominate myself as Angelica-san's representative in the duel."

[That's not all right?]

"Naturally. I don't want to pick a fight with the future king and queen. But, my popularity from defeating the black knight should be tempting for that side too, don't you think so? If they defeat me who defeated the black knight, people will go, his highness Julius is so amazing!"

I told her that I intended to nominate myself as the duel representative, but I planned to lose right from the start.

Ann looked really dissatisfied.

[Arroganz is it? With your armor, it should be easy to defeat those five.]

"What's the point winning in a kiddie duel like that? What I consider a victory is gaining a result that satisfy me in the end."

I declared with my head held high that I wasn't fixated with victory that was right before my eyes. And Ann's reaction was—.

[You are really similar with Lea.]

—She said something like that.

No way. Was my ancestor also a type of person who wasn't fixated with small victory?



After deciding the course of action, one should act on it immediately.

I returned to the academy alone and visited his highness Julius.

When I arrived at the house that was prepared inside the academy, I got surrounded by his highness Julius and the others. They were giving off a cold atmosphere.

I was in the drawing room talking to the five who were carrying weapon with a dangerous atmosphere.

Then his highness Julius got interested with my suggestion.

"So you are going to participate in the duel as Angelica's representative and then lose against me?"

"Yes."

Although the black knight was defeated in a joint effort, defeating me who was involved in that was an attractive proposal for his highness Julius.

But Jilk was glaring at me.

"Please tell us what is your intention in allying yourself with Angelica-san. Why are you nominating yourself for that kind of disadvantageous position?"

From their perspective, they couldn't believe that I would dirty my military fame by myself or allying myself with Angelica-san.

I also thought so.

I was secretly maneuvering like this because I had the knowledge from the game.

They wouldn't believe me even if I said that to them, so I made up an excuse.

"It's because having this military fame that is unbefitting for me has been bringing me a lot of trouble. I'm even called an ugly man and made to wear a mask because the girls dislike me. I'll be happier if I don't stand out."

When I said that to Jilk, he seemed to feel my sarcasm and averted his gaze.

I continued with a small sigh.

"Also, I don't want to make this matter to be too complicated. That's my honest feeling. We are still in the middle of war, it will be troublesome to get into a quarrel with Redgrave House in such time won't it?"

I wasn't good with political matter, but they should be troubled to get into an unnecessary quarrel like this in the middle of war.

But, Brad scoffed at my words.

"It looks like you're poorly informed about the politic aren't you? For Redgrave House, Angelica is just a large weak point right now. They shouldn't even have any strength to make any opposition. Rather we can use this matter to greatly reduce their strength for after the war, we're welcoming this development instead."

It seemed I was mistaken.

But, I was convinced that these five would accept my offer.

When I turned my gaze to Greg and Chris, they were looking at me even though they understood what Brad was talking about.

No, rather than me, they were looking at the achievement that they would get from defeating me, I guess?

From where they were standing, this was a chance to obtain a great achievement of defeating strong knight.

It seemed that his highness Julius also felt the same. His lips were loosening.

"So you want to tell us to forgive Redgrave House?"

"This is an internal matter of the academy, so it will be great if it's also resolved within the academy. I'm not asking for anything further than that, and I'm also not in the faction of the duke. I'm just a countryside noble."

From the perspective of countryside noble, the country getting into needless conflict was just troublesome.

"Someone in my position is unrelated with the political strife in the palace. Please feel free to do whatever you want if it doesn't involve us."

The five were suspicious at my action, but they bit at the bait I offered.

"—Very well. The duel format will be five versus one. If you keep winning and get defeated by me at the end, I'll keep this matter from spreading to outside."

"Your highness, you are going to accept that condition!?"

Jilk hurriedly tried to stop his highness Julius when he accepted my offer.

But—his highness had become blinded by love even more than I imagined.

"If I can win against Bartfalt, Olivia will be even more in love with me right? Compared to that, the matter with Angelica is just something trivial."

Jilk smiled a little when he heard that.

"—He might get defeated first before your highness can get a turn you know?"

"Jilk?"

Jilk would defeat me before his highness Julius's turn came and obtained the military fame for himself—it looked like he wanted to show his own worth to Olivia-san.

The other men were also the same.

"You two won't even get a turn! I'll be the one who defeat Bartfalt!"

Greg said that while punching his palm, then Chris looked at him with a cool gaze.

"You won't have any turn. Because I'm the one who is going to take down Bartfalt."

Brad also joined this talk after a slight delay.

"E-even I won't lose! Then, let's decide who will be the first one to fight Bartfalt. However, his highness is the general so his turn will be last."

His highness Julius stood up in panic hearing that.

"That's unfair you guys!"

The five of them forgot my existence and started to get heated up by themselves, so I gave my last condition.

"Umm~, there is also something that I wish to ask if the duel is concluded safely."

"What?"

His highness Julius was looking at me with an annoyed look, but this was the only thing that I couldn't concede.

"When everything is over, please allow me to meet with the saintess."

"A meeting with Olivia? Why is that?"

"It's just so that I can bring a story home that I have talked with the saintess herself directly. It's something that I'll be able to brag about for my whole life won't it?"

When I said that I had no other intention, the five looked at each other —and they finally decided their answer after a while.

"Very well. But, don't you dare try anything strange with Olivia."

"But of course."

I shrugged and left that place.

—Seeing those five acting like that after seeing Angelica-san's depressed figure left a weight in my mind.

I got out of the room, then I left the house, before I muttered when I was alone.

"Now then, guess I'll work hard holding back."



At the day of the duel.

Marie was watching the arena from the audience seat.

"That stupid Leon. He just decided everything by himself without talking it with me."

When Marie learned about it, the duel with Julius and the other four had already been decided.

And then, Marie was told about how this duel was just a fixed match.

Beside Marie, there was Angelica who got dark circles under her eyes.

She was looking down at the arena and watched Leon with bloodshot eyes.

"I'll definitely win if it's with Bartfalt who has defeated the black knight. That's right, everything will return to normal if I win. I'll be able to separate his highness from that monster."

Angelica had a ghastly aura around her. Marie was somewhat scared by that.

(It will be bad if I tell her that Leon is planning to lose right from the start isn't it? We have also prepared countermeasure beforehand, but will it make it in time?)

Leon only told Angelica that he would become her representative for the duel.

A purple armor entered the arena and the audiences were reeled up.

"That's Brad-sama's armor!"

"How wonderful!"

"Compared to that, Bartfalt's armor is as ugly as his mask."

Brad's armor had slender figure and a distinctive pointy head.

In contrast, Arroganz was a completely different type of armor in the first place. It was too large and looked clumsy.

But, Marie had sometimes looked after Arroganz too, so she was enraged hearing what the other girls said.

"Who was it who talked trash about my cute Arroganz! Come out here to get punched!"

Marie stood up, but her girl friends who were sitting around her held her down.

"Marie-chan, calm down!"

Angelica didn't even pay attention to that ruckus around her.

The way she looked at Arroganz that Leon was riding was eerie.

"Olivia—just you wait, I'll definitely unmask your true nature."



At the day of the duel.

For some reason I—was made to participate wearing mask.

I displayed my masked self before I boarded Arroganz before the duel began.

[Angelica challenged the saintess Olivia-sama to a duel! The one who nominated himself to be her representative for that is the “masked knight” who defeated the principality’s black knight, Leon Fou Bartfaltttttttt!!]

The announcer spoke bombastically to heat up the venue. The audiences responded to that and booed at me.

I was in the villain role in this place for allying myself with Angelica-san.

"Forget about that, what's the deal with calling me masked knight? Why am I the masked knight huh."

Nobody listened to my grumbling, but Arroganz who was standing at my side answered.

[Master is the masked knight. Arroganz has memorized it.]

"You don't need to memorize it. I'm not the masked knight."

Come to think of it, the identity of the masked knight in that otome game stayed mysterious until the end.

I wonder where was the real thing?

Then, the introduction for Brad who was standing dozens of meter ahead of me began.

[At the other side is our representative, Brad Fou Field! He is the eldest son of Margrave Field and the number one magician in the academy! He is also one of the saintess’s guardian!]

Brad's introduction was passionate, the announcer even tacked “our” when mentioning him.

It seemed that even the announcer was my enemy.

Brad waved his hand to respond to the cheers from the audiences.

"Thank you. Everyone, watch my fight and sear it into your memory."

Then Brad turned his gaze at me and he pointed the red rose that he was holding.

"Not only your mask, but even your nickname has no flair. It's my victory in both appearance and flair."

"It was you guys who handed me this mask and prepared that nickname you know? That just sounds sad, so don't say something like that from your own end."

"Y-you're wrong! It wasn't me who prepared them. It was Jilk!"

[Then, both sides please enter your armor! The holy duel shall begin after this!]

The announcer stopped our talk and we got into our armor.

After I entered Arroganz's cockpit, it was like my body got sucked into the seat and fixed in place.

When I grasped the control stick, Arroganz talked to me.

[Master, this is a fixed game. Arroganz, will lose skillfully.]

It seemed that Arroganz also intended to lose intentionally, but it would be a bit problematic to lose against someone like Brad.

"We're winning this one. Don't go too far okay?"

[Arroganz, will work hard holding back.]

"Now then, I wonder how far I should keep winning."

Even if I was going to lose, the way it was done had to be correct.

Losing easily would be problematic in its own way.

It would still be better if it just made me got called weak, but others would suspect that this was a fixed game if I lost too blatantly.

No, there was no denying that this was a fixed game though.

I had to "perform a good match" so that others wouldn't suspect anything.

After both sides finished preparing, a weapon shot out from Arroganz's backpack.

The weapon that was shot above me fell down and I grabbed it with the right hand.

That weapon was a battle axe.

It was a sinister battle axe that looked like a bat with its wings spread wide open. Its appearance was truly like a villain's weapon.

The surrounding sent their cheers to Brad while hurling abuses at me.

[Brad-sama, beat up that guy right away!]

[Just kill that traitorous masked knight!]

There were even guys who said horrible words like kill.

—I'd take a small revenge at them later. For sure!

[Then begin!]

When the announcer proclaimed the beginning of the duel, Brad took a spear on the back of his armor—a cone shaped lance that was specialized for thrusting and he rushed toward me.

I backed down while deflecting his thrust with my axe.

[There is still moreeee!]

Brad got really into it and repeated his thrust. I dodged them or deflected them.

"He can move better than I thought."

Brad was weak in close quarter combat in that otome game. He had really given me a hard time.

After all that was it for him if an enemy got close.

It was nostalgic how I formed various tactics in order to allow him to fight from long range.

I moved the control stick and stepped on the pedal to make Arroganz advanced forward.

I made a big swing with the axe and deflected the spear that Brad was holding.

Brad backed down and pointed his finger at me.

[Not bad. But, playing time is over!]

When he said that, the spears attached on the back of his armor floated in the air and pointed their tip at Arroganz.

The spears were floating in the air by themselves, and then they flew like missile.

Arroganz flew close to the ground, but the spears followed behind him.

Arroganz seemed surprised.

[Homing function. Arroganz, shocked.]

"Amazing huh. Now then, let's show them a struggle."

I had cut off the mike so that our conversation wouldn't be leaked out, so I could say whatever I like.

I dodged one of the homing spear, then I swung my axe to another one to slap it to the ground and destroy it.

Then the third one grazed Arroganz's shoulder, while the spear that should have been dodged changed direction and hit the backpack on Arroganz's shoulder.

Once that happened, the spears kept flying around Arroganz and repeated their attacks many times.

Brad seemed convinced that he had won. He began to talk in delight.

[Dance to amuse me even more. You will just keep getting whittled down if you can't dodge the spears that I controlled with magic.]

Arroganz's armor became covered with scratches. Even so I moved my index finger

with composure.

\*Tap tap\*, I tapped the control stick several times.

"Has the number of attack surpassed a hundred? It should be fine already isn't it?"

[One hundred and twenty!]

Arroganz had kept track of the attacks accurately. He corrected my words as though in complaint.

"My bad. Well, things goes just as planned."

I stepped on the pedal and charged at Brad's armor. Then Arroganz swung down the axe.

By forcefully closing the distance with such overbearing movement, Brad's armor fell on its butt.

The blade that was swung toward the fallen Brad stopped just a few centimeters before it hit.

I turned on the mike.

"A splendid battle. I would be in danger if things continued like that."

Brad muttered in frustration, but—.

[N-not yet. It's still not over yet!]

[No, the fight's over. Get back already Brad.]

[Your highness!?]

—His highness Julius stopped him. Brad accepted his defeat.



"Yosshaaaaaa!! You see that, that's Arroganz's power! No. I mean, that's Leon's power!"

Marie was the one who acted the happiest when Arroganz won.

She thrust her fist high toward the sky.

As for the atmosphere at the audience seats, although the audiences were sending chilly gaze toward Marie, they were praising the duel just now.

"Even though Brad-sama would win with just a bit more"

"Brad-sama is weak in close quarter combat isn't he?"

"But, the next fight will be the last won't it? Bartfalt's armor is already battered like that."

Marie folded her arms hearing that and sat back down roughly.

(Realize that they are holding back down there. Well, it'll be bad if they notice though.)



Julius felt slightly relieved looking down at the battered Arroganz from his seat.

(I'll be troubled if you lose here.)

From a glance, it looked like Brad would win seeing that his armor was still not even scratched.

But, from Julius's perspective, he would be troubled if the match was already decided at this early.

The next one fighting Greg entered his armor in high spirits.

"I'll finish him in my turn! Olivia, watch my fight carefully from there."

Greg gave a thumbs up at Olivia. Olivia saw him off while joining her hands together as though she was praying for him.

"I'll pray for your victory Greg."

"Ou!"

Greg boarded a mass produced type armor. He acted like his victory was assured.

Julius and others made a bitter expression seeing that.

They were competing with each other as rivals to become Olivia's number one.

Julius folded his arms and looked down at Arroganz that was facing Greg on the arena.

"At least keep winning until you reach my turn."

Julius thought that it didn't matter even if the other four were defeated in order to get Olivia to like him more.



[The hero who has challenged numerous dungeons and fought at the forefront of the volunteer army! His name is Greg Fou Seberg! The herald of our saintessssss!!]

The arena was enveloped in cheers. Greg in his armor pointed his spear at Arroganz.

[Bartfalt, I'm glad you didn't lost against that weakling Brad. After all I'm going to be the one who defeat you!]

I was thinking what kind of victory I should perform against Greg inside the cockpit.

"I'm also not planning to lose at this stage."

[Just what I'm asking for!]

The announcer proclaimed the start of the duel and Greg charged right at that instant.

He launched a combo using his spear, but his movement was several levels above Brad.

I used my axe like a shield to endure Greg's fierce attack.

"Aa~, I should have prepared a shield. Ah, but I'll look like I'm struggling hard with this won't I?"

I turned off the mike and cracked a joke inside the cockpit, but Arroganz replied to me seriously.

[Should I make a shield in Partner? Creation possible.]

"No need. I won't even need any shield against these guys if we get serious anyway."

While I was focusing on defense, Greg seemed to get into a good mood in his fighting.

I would attack back once for every ten attacks that Greg made, but each time I would calculate it so that he could dodge my attack.

From the perspective of the surrounding, it must look like Greg was cornering me.

"Yosh, Arroganz. Purge the fake part."

[Purge!]

It was a show so that the shoulder part was blown away when Greg's spear hit there.

The part that had been prepared beforehand to make it looked like Arroganz was heavily damaged fell on the ground. Cheers burst out from the audiences.

Greg jumped back for the moment and rotated his spear around while making a pose.

[I'll keep shaving you off just like this!]

I clapped inside the cockpit.

"It's great that you are getting into the mood. Then, it should be enough already."

Greg started attacking fiercely once more, but I pretended that I was somehow defending against it and continued to fight.

And then, when Greg showed his fatigue—I pretended to land a hit on his armor that looked like a coincidental counter.

The axe's flat side instead of the blade hit Greg's armor and it fell down.

There I held his armor down to give a show of a lame victory.

I turned on the mike and played my act.

"Oh man~, you are really strong. I think I win only because of how tough my armor is. If not for that, it would be you who emerged as the winner. Well, perhaps I would be the one who got defeated if only you are riding a slightly better armor"

He would win if his armor was better.

After being told that, Greg squeezed out a voice that was brimming with frustration.

[D-dammit!]

Your chance of victory against me would still be hopelessly low even if you prepared a state-of-the-art armor though.

Reflect a bit on yourself who didn't care of what kind of tool you were using.

The match was decided and Greg left. The next one who appeared was Chris in a blue armor.

There were several swords of different type on its back, but the armor's right hand was holding a large sword.

Chris threw a cold sentence at the withdrawing Greg.

[That was unsightly.]

[You bastard!]

The two were about to get into a fight, but Olivia-san calmed them down from the audience seat.

[Both of you stop! Greg, I'm glad you are safe. Chris too, do your best. Also, don't tease Greg like that. Okay?]

The two of them reluctantly stopped after being told that. Chris came to in front of me.

The announcer started Chris's introduction. As expected, it was also filled with passion like before.

[Our next representative is Chris Fia Arclightttttt!! He is the successor of the sword saint and there is nobody who doesn't know about the strength of this young sword

master from his accomplishments in the volunteer army! This is the entrance of a fierce warrior who has obtained as much war gain as that Greg!!]

Chris pointed the tip of his large sword at me.

[Here I come.]



The audiences were getting heated up.

"Aa~a, I never thought that Greg-sama would lose because of a lucky blow like that."

"That was really unlucky of him."

"But, it's also the end for Bartfalt with this. His armor is already in tatter like that."

Although Greg managed to corner his opponent, he lost due to a fluke.

The audiences still believed one hundred percent on the victory of Julius and others because of that.

Marie was irritated listening to that.

(The prince is going to win at the end anyway. That's how it will end. But you know —Leon and Arroganz are actually far stronger than this okay)

Marie could understand Leon's thinking that it would be fine even if he lost, but she still couldn't accept it.

Their comrades from the same group, Daniel and Raymond were praising Leon, saying that he had done well.

"It's already enough that he manage to keep winning until this far."

"He has fought hard. If it's like this then he can still save face even if he lose."

Leon would be able to make excuse even if he lost against a master swordsman like Chris.

But, a girl stood up hearing those words.

"It's fine even if he lose you say? Don't screw around! This is a duel to decide the country's future! Defeat won't be allowed. Win—he has to win so his highness can be separated from that witch, if not I—I!"

Angelica's atmosphere was abnormal. Daniel and Raymond averted their face seeing that.

Marie hurriedly pulled at Angelica to make her sit down.

"S-sit down. Look, the next match is starting."

"This is a duel! It's not a match!"

"R-right. I get it already so sit down!"

Marie somehow made the agitated Angelica to sit down again. She felt really tired.

While that was going on, the sword that Chris swung down severed Arroganz's arm.

Earthshaking cheers erupted from the audiences.



[Left arm lost.]

I whistled while sweating coldly inside Arroganz's cockpit.

"As expected from the swordsman-sama. Did he get stronger from experiencing war?"

Chris was stronger than I expected.

No, all of them were stronger than I expected.

It seemed their strength had improved from participating in the war as volunteer soldier.

Chris's blue armor took a stance with its large sword and immediately slashed.

[Got you!]

That attack targeted my cockpit. I wanted to question him whether he was planning to kill me.

"I have given you my left arm. So it should be fine for you to quit here."

Originally I planned to lose that arm at further point than this, so it should be fine to end this here in exchange for that. I made Arroganz stepped forward.

I swung down the battle axe. It severed the two arms of Chris's armor that were holding the large sword.

"You can't hold a weapon with this right? It's over."

I turned on the mike and told Chris that. Chris showed bewilderment in respond.

[W-what was that attack just now? Don't tell me, were you holding back?]

He almost noticed the fact that I was holding back, so I pretended that it was a coincidence.

"No way. I only stepped forward because I wanted to make my last attack."

[You're saying that the attack just now was just a coincidence?]

"I too am a man who survived fighting that black knight even if only by chance. Besides, I'm also someone lucky."

Was my luck good or bad? If I was asked to answer that honestly, I wouldn't know how to answer it.

But, I believed that my luck wasn't bad.

[To think that I'll have to concede this achievement to Jilk or his highness]

Chris withdrew with a bitter voice. I saw off his back while turning off the mike.

"You guys are strong. But, that black knight old man was even stronger."

Arroganz looked damaged all over, but the duel wasn't over.

[It's amazing that you managed to win until this far. You are strong. You are worthy of respect.]

The one who appeared from the sky while showing off with such line was Jilk in a green armor.

When he landed, he made a pose that excited the audiences.

"This guy's next huh."

I turned on the mike and responded to Jilk's address to me.

"My armor is already battered like this though."

[It seems so. But, I still won't hold back.]

He said that with much enjoyment in his voice, for me something like this wasn't enjoyable at all.

While I was thinking that, Jilk talked to me with a volume that couldn't be heard by the audience.

[Bartfalt-kun, how about we make a deal?]

"A deal?"

[Look at it from my point of view. Simply winning easily here won't become something that can appeal to Olivia-san. You too want to have a good fight where both of us are showing everything we have aren't you?]

That was my plan from the start, but it seemed this guy wanted to be the one who defeated me.

"I'm already planning to lose right from the start though?"

[No, please lose against me. There is no need to bother his highness for this.]

"That's—"

[I'm asking for a favor here. After all unlike the others, I am somewhat falling behind in my relationship with Olivia-san.]

"Falling behind?"

Jilk talked about what he meant by that.

But, that was something unacceptable for me.

[I mean Claris Fia Atlee. She is my former fiancée, but she has caused a lot of problems. She was also the main culprit who assaulted Olivia-san. It makes me feel guilty toward Olivia-san because of her fault.]

"—Guilty?"

[She has really done something uncalled-for. I have cancelled my engagement with her, so she should just withdraw without making any fuss. And yet she got in the way of my relationship with Olivia-san—even though I would be able to be in a romantic relationship with her, just the two of us if not because of her.]

I recalled the extremely haggard figure of Claris-senpai.

When I saved her, she had become really thin.

The man who she loved to such degree was this kind of man. That was just too pitiful.

"I, hate someone like you."

[—I guess I don't mind either way. Then, you don't mind if I don't hold back anything against you right?]

The announcer began to introduce Jilk.

[To think that we will reach the fourth match! Is there a goddess of fortune accompanying Bartfalt today!? But, our next representative is Jilk Fia Marmorria! The foster brother and best friend of his highness Julius! He is a rifle expert and no enemy who entered his scope in the battlefield managed to get away! How long will Bartfalt be able to last against him?]

After the start was announced, Jilk flew up to the sky.

[Lose unsightly.]

You see—I had decided that you were the only one I wouldn't lose against for giving me that strange mask.



Olivia was looking up to the sky.

After Jilk's armor flew to the sky, Leon's Arroganz chased after it.

Arroganz was already damaged all over and even lost its left arm. It was painful to see.

Jilk took position in the sky and attacked Arroganz with his rifle from afar.

Arroganz's armor was whittled off by the bullets. It was in disadvantage in everyone's opinion.

(What a farce.)

Olivia know that this duel's result had been decided from the start when she saw Arroganz's movement.

When she turned her gaze to her surrounding, she saw Julius following Arroganz's figure with a heated gaze.

"Dodge that one! Win this no matter what and then fight me!"

He spoke like he wanted Jilk to lose.

And then the other three were also the same.

Brad looked like he still couldn't accept the result.

"Even though I'm the one who dealt the most damage on Bartfalt"

Greg folded his arms and denied his words.

"You would still lose even if you continued the fight at that time. I'm the one who got lost just because of a lucky punch. No way in hell I can accept that."

Chris scoffed at Greg's opinion.

"It's me who dealt the most damage to Bartfalt. You two only managed to scratch his armor, but I took his left arm."

It seemed they were talking about who managed to obtain the most accomplishment, but Olivia only averted her gaze.

(They don't even notice that their opponent went easy on them. So unsightly. However, Leon is also a disappointment. If he is Lea's descendant, I thought that he would amuse me a little bit more but—I guess he only has the same surname by coincidence.)

If he was someone who descended from the bloodline of her beloved Lea, then she wished he would show a bit more backbone.

The duel would be prolonged until Julius's turn anyway, and then he would lose there. That was Olivia's prediction.

In fact, Leon was showing a figth to make Jilk looked good.

Jilk had run out of bullet and switched weapon, then he assaulted Arroganz and the two of them fell until the arena.

(What a boring man. It seems that he wants to meet with me, but his worth is only as a disposable pawn.)

While Olivia determined Leon's value in her heart, Jilk's armor was thrown on the ground.

Arroganz wrenched victory through a battle that was like a mud fight. Most of its armor was battered.

There was even a spot that was smashed and the inner mechanism could be peeked from there. There were also many cracked spots.

Seeing that, Julius threw off his mantel and headed to his armor.

"Now it's my turn! Olivia, I'll offer a victory to you."

Olivia joined her hands and smiled just like Julius wanted.

"I'm praying for your victory Julius."

(Make this farce flashy at the very least.)

She was completely exasperated in her heart, but she didn't show any sign of that at the slightest at the surface.

Julius tensed his expression to look really serious, then he expressed his feeling to Olivia.

"Wait for me Olivia. I'll become a worthy man for you."

Olivia saw off Julius entering the cockpit. Then she turned her gaze toward Arroganz with the mask of smile still pasted on her face.

"Now then, I wonder how he will lose."



A beautiful white armor descended in front of Arroganz that was damaged all over from the consecutive battles.

It was an armor that was mainly for show. It was even wearing a mantel. It also had a sword and a shield.

The announcer made the introduction. It was even more passionate from before seeing that this was the last match.

[Bartfalt has advanced until this far, but it's finally the end for him! The last fortress and shield that protect the saintess! The crown prince of Hohlfahrt Kingdom and the leader of the volunteer army in the battlefield, it's his highness Juliussssss!! Just how many enemies has he consigned to oblivion with that shining white armor!? The crown prince of Hohlfahrt Kingdom has make his entrance to face the traitorous masked knight!]

His highness Julius intentionally opened his armor's hatch to show himself. The audiences shrieked shrilly in response.

"Princeeeee~!"

"Defeat that trash Bartfalt~!"

"Ah, his highness waved his hand to me just now!"

And then after he finished giving service to the audiences, his highness Julius looked at me with a smile that was filled with slight implication.

[Bartfalt, I'm pleased that you manage to win until this far. Though it seems that it has taken a lot out of you. Do you need a break first?]

"Please allow me to continue just like this."

[Very good! That aside, where did you get that mask from?]

It seemed that he was curious with the mask I was wearing.

"It's something that Jilk gave me. So this mask isn't due to your highness's instruction?"

[If it was me then I wouldn't give you such tasteful mask. However, why did Jilk choose such mask?]

Tasteful? It seemed that his highness Julius's sense differed from the society at large.

More importantly, you wouldn't give me a tasteful mask? That meant you would hand me a distasteful mask instead? The way he said it was really bothersome.

His highness Julius took a stance with his sword and shield in preparation for the duel.

[—Well, it doesn't matter. More importantly, let's us have a "fair and square sacred duel".]

It was amazing that you could say that.

Asking for a fair and square duel in a fixed game, that was just funny.

But, it was something that I suggested from my own initiative, so let's held back from laughing.

"May the best one win, or something."

The announcer declared the start of the match. At the same time both of us stepped forward and exchanged fierce blows with each other.

Weapons clashed and sparks scattered, but the one armed Arroganz was in the defensive.

I turned off the mike and took a deep breath.

"The only thing left is to lose huh."

Doing this much was enough.

If I lost after putting up a good fight, surely his highness and the others would also feel satisfied.

But, his highness Julius got into a good mood and talked to me.

[You are skilled. I'll permit you to join us after this duel is over. I'll even allow you to join my royal guard.]

I turned on the mike and talked to him.

But, our talk wouldn't reach the audience with this volume.

Because of that, his highness even talked about something that other people mustn't hear.

"Thank you for the fofer. But, I'm just a countryside noble, so please allow me to decline about the matter of the royal guard."

[No need to hold back. Work as my knight from here on. I recognize that you have skill.]

So persistent.

Well, guess this was also a period of time where he wanted to have a pawn of his own.

After all, Redgrave House's faction that was supporting his highness Julius until now had been disbanded.

It was also unknown how much Marquis Frampton's faction would cooperate with him right now, so no wonder he wanted a fighting strength that he could personally control.

"You were too hasty in dissolving your faction huh."

[—I guess. But, just that much is a cheap price if it's for the sake of obtaining Olivia.]

"Eh?"

We locked swords. During that time his highness Julius chuckled.

He let out a dark voice as though he was discarding his image as a good young man.

[I'm thankful to you. After all you give yourself to become my achievement like this. With this Olivia too will see me in better light than the others. You served as a really good bait.]

I lifted up my axe and took distance. His highness held his shield on his front and tackled me.

I intentionally allowed myself to be hit. However it seemed that Arroganz couldn't fully endure the impact and got pushed back.

Cheers erupted from the surrounding.

"That armor isn't as strong as it look."

"his highness's armor is cutting-edge. Bartfalt's junk can't be compared to that!"

"Your highness, finish him off just like that!"

The cheering of the audiences who didn't know anything and the way his highness Julius talked made me felt complicated.

His highness Julius who you guys put your hope on was a man who carried out everything until now just for love. I wanted to tell them that.

He dismantled his own faction, expelled a lot of students from the academy, and participated in war leading the volunteer army just to play hero.

I should be allowed to at least say something back.

"I myself cannot say anything about other person, but still, you are the worst."

[So what! I wouldn't be able to obtain her if I didn't do that! It doesn't matter even if I'm called the worst, I've obtained Olivia!]

I blocked the sword that was swung down on me with Arroganz's axe, but then his highness Julius kicked Arroganz's undefended body.

Arroganz shook and stepped back. His highness spread open the arms of his armor.

[This is love. Can you understand it, Bartfalt? Love cannot be replaced by anything else—that was what Olivia taught me.]

"Then, please cancel your previous engagement more kindly. Thanks to that it become a ruckus like this."

I wouldn't say to do it in a smarter way, but he should at least talk it out with Angelica-san too beforehand.

If he did that, it shouldn't become a ruckus that led to duel like this—I think.

Well, from Angelica-san's perspective, she got her fiancée stolen.

It was only natural for her to get enraged.

From there it led to something like this duel commotion. Just what were they doing?

"At least go talk to here when this is over!"

Arroganz swung the axe to the side with enough room for his highness to dodge easily.

His highness avoided my large swing with a dancing like movement from his white armor. Such movement charmed the audiences.

His skill in controlling the armor was also excellent, but it was doubtful whether such showy movement was practical for real battle or not.

[You mean Angelica? That woman doesn't have that much worth.]

"Ha?"

[Compared to Olivia, everything else is just garbage. She is the one and only, an absolute existence.]

Was he this kind of man who would say something like that? As a capture target in otome game, shouldn't he be an ideal person for woman to a degree that should be impossible?

My selfish expectation was betrayed. His highness Julius then continued talking as if he was possessed.

[She is the only one I need. There is nothing else I need other than Olivia. If it's for that—I'll do anything!]

The white armor rapidly approached. It used its shield to smash away Arroganz's axe and thrust the sword toward the torso.

The audiences screamed seeing that attack that targeted the cockpit, but I had prepared countermeasure for that after the fight against the black knight.

The area around the cockpit was surrounded by tough material as armor. It couldn't be pierced by a blade.

The sword broke, but the white armor kicked Arroganz flying until the wall. Arroganz crashed and fell sitting down on the ground.

—It was over with this.

I turned off the mike.

"Arroganz, you did great."

[Arroganz worked hard. Master also worked hard.]

"Something like this can't be called as hard work though."

When Arroganz stopped moving, cheers burst out from the audiences. Then applauses welled up and after that the announcer announced the victory of his highness Julius with a volume that was even louder than before.

[The winner is his highness Juliusssss!! It was a battle that was truly worthy for a crown prince!! Even though his opponent is the masked knight who defeated that black knight, his highness still showed us such magnificent fightttt!! Overwhelming! Truly an overwhelming victory!]

—I had already faced four people before this who looked like they were cornering me, but in the end only the winner who gained the spotlight.

Arroganz picked up the voices of Olivia-san—and the other four at the audience seats.

Brad was talking in vexation.

[Even though I was the one who cornered him the most.]

Greg was resentful from losing due to a fluke.

[It would be over already at my turn if only that lucky punch didn't happen.]

Chris also looked like he couldn't accept the result.

[His highness is helped by the order of turn. Bartfalt has also gotten really exhausted after facing me.]

Jilk was smiling, but he must be really irritated at the inside.

[There is no need for his highness to even come out. The smartest way to end this duel should be with me as the one defeating him.]

The four couldn't accept the result. In respond Olivia-san was talking kindly to them.

She was smiling. It looked like she was really happy.

[I know that the four of you have done your best. That's why, please don't look that discontent. Everyone was really wonderful out there.]

The four got embarrassed and blushed at Olivia-san's words.

"—She doesn't look possessed but, I wonder what's the truth?"

I returned my gaze to his highness Julius. He was making his white armor's hand to

wave at the surrounding.

It looked like he was getting absorbed in giving service to the audiences.

And then, he began to talk about his love with a voice that echoed through the arena.

[I'm thankful for everyone's support. With this, there is nobody else who object to my relationship with Olivia isn't it? I believe there is nobody else but, allow me to say one thing. I—love Olivia! I love Olivia more than anybody else! It's not because she is the saintess. I love Olivia herself. This is the first time in my life I feel like this.]

He extended his armor's hand toward Olivia-san at the audience seat. She also waved her hand back in respond.

[I also love you—Julius.]

[Thank you Olivia.]

I could hear cheers "His highness banzai! Saintess banzai!" from the audiences.

Hearing that made me thought.

"I'm the one who did it, but still, this just look like a farce to me."

[This is a farce. Arroganz has remembered it.]

"Aa~, so you're memorizing that word in this situation. I don't think it's good for your education to learn this."

Also, this must be very hard for Angelica-san right now.

After all, the prince he loved was singing about his love to other woman in the presence of so many people.

When I considered that, I was unable to keep listening to this love confession.

"But, this is just like in the scenario. This is fine—it should be fine."

I tried to persuade myself to accept the situation, but I couldn't erase this murkiness in my chest.

Unlike me, his highness Julius was making a dramatized speech in a good mood.

[Angelica, the representative you prepared is defeated. It's a fitting result for someone without love like you. Now you cannot make any excuse anymore. Now, apologize to Olivia right here!]

—What was this guy talking about?

This wasn't in the plan.

I turned on the mike and talked with a volume that his highness could hear.

"This is enough already. There shouldn't be any need to go that far."

But his highness didn't stop.

He heard my voice, and yet he ignored me and continued talking.

[The birth of the saintess is an auspicious event for the kingdom! And yet you denied that and clung on your engagement with me for your own selfish interest. You are the one who is a disaster for this country. You insulted Olivia as witch in the party didn't you? That word is only fitting for you! You pitiful cursed witch imprisoned in your own greed!]

"Oi, I'm telling you to stop already!"

His highness Julius turned his armor's head toward me only briefly.

But, he immediately returned his gaze back to Angelica-san at the audience seat.

[You are an ugly woman who only think of yourself. But, I shall give you just one more chance. Come down here and apologize to Olivia. Kneel and bow your head in regret of your own sin and repent!]

The arena that was enveloped with shrill cheers before this instantly got enveloped in hysterical shouts chanting "Apologize!".

When I looked at the audience seats, I could see Angelica-san looking down.

And then Marie who was beside her stood up.

"What is that idiot doing"

Even though it would be better if she endured it, Marie stood up and getting angry.

[T-there should be a better way to say that!]

Angelica-san was defeated. To be more accurate, her defeat had been determined from the start.

And yet, his highness Julius was acting as though he had wrenched victory by his own effort.

[She need to show her sincerity now that she is defeated. I will report the particulars of this event to the palace. Angelica's apology will greatly affect how she will be dealt with at that time. —If she apologize and beg for her live unsightly, then her crime will also be slightly lightened at that time.]

I frowned hearing that.

Not only she had to apologize, but also begging for her life? Besides, for this matter to get reported to the palace—that would be a violation of the promise with me.

"What happened with the promise to keep this thing within the academy?"

I spoke to his highness Julius with a volume that couldn't be heard by the surrounding.

[It's your fault for trusting a verbal promise like that. I'll reduce Redgrave House's power using this chance in consideration for after the war is over. Have you gotten smarter from this, country bumpkin noble-kun?]

"—Yeah, thanks to you."

Somewhere inside, I couldn't forgive myself for trusting these capture targets.

I should be more vigilant.

No—it was my own fault for suggesting something like this so thoughtlessly.

Arroganz consoled the frustrated me.

[Master, you angry? Arroganz, can still work hard.]

"—No, not yet."

I didn't move Arroganz and observed the flow of the event there.

"Calm down. It's not like it's my business whatever happen to Redgrave House. What's important is whether Olivia-san is still sane or not. As long as I understand that, who cares whatever happen to whoever. That's right, it's fine like that. I'm just making use of Angelica-san."

Thinking back now, I became her representative in order to lose.

"I myself am also a liar. I have no right to blame his highness."

I acted like I was giving up. Arroganz asked me.

[Really? Master, you liar. Lying isn't good. Master, is angry.]

"—"

I quietly observed the situation without answering Arroganz.

No matter what happened here—it wasn't my business.

I just needed to achieve my own objective.



[Angelica, apologize to Olivia! Cry and beg for forgiveness!]

Angelica shed tears at how the man she loved had changed completely.

"Is Olivia really that much better? Do you love that saintess—that witch to such degree? I love you. Even though I love you"

She was grabbing the handrail and broke down crying, but the surrounding didn't stop showering her with insults.

"You witch!"

"Go down and apologize already!"

"This is a fitting end for a villain."

The worried Marie approached Angelica and helped her stood up.

"Angelica-san."

"—Your name is Marie right? I'm sorry that it ended like this after I borrowed your fiancée. I thought that I'll surely win with the knight who defeated the black knight as my representative."

If even Leon was defeated, then Angelica had no more way to stop what was going on.

Angelica stood up and held her head high. Then she answered with dignity.

"Apology? I'm not going to apologize. I believe that my action is right. I'm not that obsessed to live that I'm going to lie just to get through this.—This is my answer, your highness."

She wouldn't apologize.

Even if she died because of that, Angelica didn't intend to concede that.

The surrounding got enraged by her defiant attitude. Marie casted her gaze down.

"Why. It will be better if you apologize and ask for forgiveness. At this rate things will become really bad for you."

Marie was worried for her. Angelica expressed her feeling at her.

"You're right. I myself think that I'm being stupid. But, if I yield here, that will mean rejecting everything that I am. My feeling to his highness, my loyalty to the country, and—that saintess. No, that witch, I won't tolerate her even if I have to fall into hell."

The feeling that was like a black flame blazing inside her was aggravating her hatred toward Olivia.

For some reason Olivia who was far away from here looked like she was smiling in her eyes.

"—I'll definitely take revenge on you someday"



While the surrounding was feeling righteous indignation toward Angelica, Olivia was the only one who was impressed by her spirit.

(Is it instinct? Or perhaps love? It's amazing that she can be so hateful at my existence. She can even resist the ability of this Olivia girl. Her willpower is really powerful.)

Olivia's mysterious ability.

It was an ability to send her feeling to other people's heart.

It didn't care of logic. No matter what she said, her words would shake the other side's feeling.

Even if someone was hostile toward her, everything would be over as long as she could have a talk with that person. It was such excellent ability.

Angelica repelled that ability and still showed the will to fight even now. That was a proof of her excellence.

(But, everything is already too late. Your words can't reach your beloved Julius. Too bad for you, daughter of Redgrave House. You can curse your own bloodline for that.)

She smiled to herself and enjoyed Angelica's defeat.

She imagined what kind of future was awaiting Angelica in delight—then Arroganz stood up.

[EXHIBITION MATCHHHHHHH!!]

Just when she thought what he was going to do, the battered Arroganz started saying that it could still fight.

The arena that was raining down insults at Angelica fell silent and focused on Arroganz once more.

The surrounding was bewildered.

"What is he saying?"

"Does he want to do an informal fight?"

"Oi, did that guy get hit on the head? His armor is already damaged like that."

Olivia was surprised by Leon's yell. She felt nostalgic in her heart.

(What is he saying out of nowhere? But—what is this feeling? It's nostalgic. Also, it's making my heart pounding.)

Arroganz moved to the center of the arena and stabbed its axe to the ground.

[There are representatives who think that their turn order is bad right? If there is anyone who think that they can win against me right now, then come at me. This chance won't come again you know! If you want then you all can come at me simultaneously. It's a race to see who can defeat me!]

Those words were directed to the other four than Julius.

The four had lost against Leon, but they didn't think of their defeat as valid. The corner of their lips were raised and nasty grin formed on their face.

Leon spoke more to push the back of those four.

[Is it alright that his highness Julius is getting further ahead like this~?]

For the four those words became the trigger. Greg rushed toward his armor.

"Yeah. There won't be any more fluke! I'll defeat you and show everyone my true strength!"

Seeing that, Brad also broke into a run.

"You cheater! I'm the one who is going to defeat Bartfalt!"

Chris and Jilk also ran after them. They got into their armor and descended to the arena.

It seemed only Chris was riding a spare armor.

Olivia was looking down at the arena.

"What is he planning?"

When she noticed, Julius's white armor was drawing near to Arroganz.

[What are you doing! The match is already decided!]

[That's why, I'm thinking to heat up the place with an informal match. It's just too pitiful for the other four if your highness becomes the only one to show off your coolness isn't it?]

[Don't screw around! Defeating you is my achievement! It's mine alone!]

[I don't deny that. But, it looks like the other four are fully motivated though.]

Leon conversed with Julius flippantly. During that time, the other four who responded to his sudden proposal had descended with their armor.

Arroganz was surrounded by five armors. It lifted up its axe and stored it into its backpack.

It seemed that it was planning to fight barehanded.

The four rushed toward Arroganz with weapon in hands.

[This time I'm going to beat you up thoroughly!]

When Greg rushed forward in full speed, the other three were also heading toward Arroganz.

Comrades were competing with each other over achievement. That was what they were showing.

Anybody who watched saw that the thoroughly damaged Arroganz had no chance of victory.

Rather—wouldn't he get killed if the four got carried away?

The four's momentum was so energetic that it made everyone considered that.

But—.

"I see. As I thought you are going to do that huh, Lea!"

—Nobody heard Olivia yelling like that.

Everyone's gaze was focused to the arena. The right arm of Greg's armor got grabbed and crushed with tearing sound that reached everyone's ear.

Greg's armor was lifted with one arm and swung around to be thrown at Brad's armor immediately.

The two armors got blow away. Then Arroganz approached the armor of Jilk who was taken aback by what occurred.

[W-what's going on—]

He immediately raised his rifle and pulled the trigger, but Arroganz's armor deflected the bullet.

Arroganz didn't stop and caught Jilk's armor. Then without pause both flew until the wall. When Jilk's armor crashed on the wall, Arroganz started running along the round wall of the arena while dragging the armor.

A lot of sparks scattered from Jilk's armor.

[S-stop. This is different from what we-!?]

[I can't hear youuu!]

Jilk's armor that was scrapped by the wall was thrown. Then this time Arroganz turned toward Chris's armor that was rushing to attack.

Chris's armor was just about to swing down its large sword at Arroganz.

Everyone must be imagining the scene of Arroganz getting split into two.

[This is the endddddd!]

The slash should become a full powered attack, but it was smashed by Arroganz's right

arm.

The blade was broken into pieces. Chris was so shocked that he couldn't even say anything.

Arroganz grabbed his armor and slammed it onto the ground, then it stomped it roughly.

It kept stomping and stomping until the armor's arms and legs were crushed. Then it turned toward Julius's armor.

Unbelievably, the four armors were turned to pieces in an instant by the rampaging Arroganz.

It seemed the four had fainted. There was no sign their armors rising up.

But, the audiences got really quiet as though they had been frozen by that one-sided slaughter.

Leon talked to the remaining Julius.

His voice was low. It contained anger somewhere in it, but he was forcefully acting cheerful.

[Now, only your highness remains.]

[Y-you, do you understand what are you doing!]

[This is just a friendly unofficial match you know? Let's enjoy it more.]

[Don't screw with me. The duel should end with my victory.]

[You're right. But, this is just an unofficial match! The duel end with the victory of you guys. There is no changing that fact!]

Arroganz walked closer. Julius backed away.

The guests seemed to realize the strangeness of what was going on from that.

"Why is his highness fearing Bartfalt?"

"His highness just need to defeat him again."

"Forget about that—how can that armor still fight with that much damage?"

The armor had lost its left arm, its body was also battered all over.

It was strange that it could still move.

However, Leon who heard the voices of the audiences moved.

[Oops, I guess I should take off everything soon. Arroganz—remove the parts for the show.]

After those words were said, there was a small explosion and Arroganz got enveloped in white smoke.

Arroganz's cracked parts were scattered on the ground around it.

And then, when the white smoke was blown by the wind and Arroganz's figure showed up, what appeared was Arroganz's undamaged form.

The left arm was still gone, but it looked as though it had been cut off from the start.

Julius clearly looked shaken. Olivia was desperately holding back her laughter seeing that.

"You already fulfilled your end of the deal by letting them win the duel, so there won't be any problem even if you beat them up afterward. Is that what you are thinking? That's great. You are really the best, Leon!"

Leon's action made the nostalgic image of Lea to overlap over it. Olivia cleared her throat slightly before talking to Julius.

It was her form of support to make the hesitating Julius decided to fight Leon.

"Julius—please offer victory to me one more time. Surely you can do it if it's you."

(Now you have no choice but to fight after I say that aren't you?)

Olivia laughed inside her heart. Just as she expected, Julius regained the willingness

to fight once more.

[Olivia!? G-got it. Someone bring me a weapon!]

When he demanded a replacement for the weapon that he lost, a new weapon was brought to him.

Julius received that and took a stance with his white armor, but Arroganz didn't carry any weapon.

Julius was doing nothing but backing away. Perhaps he was scared of Arroganz that didn't have any weapon.

Before long, his back hit the wall—Julius stepped forward as though to oppose his fear and swung down his sword on Arroganz.

Arroganz dodged that with its large body and kicked the leg of Julius's armor. It made him stumbled and fell.

Olivia recalled the nostalgic past after seeing Julius's pathetic figure.

(Leon, you are really similar with Lea. Perhaps you are really descended from Lea's bloodline. Or perhaps—you are his reincarnation?)

Suddenly Leon whose figure she couldn't see inside the armor felt lovable to her.

She touched her blushing cheeks with both her hands. She was staring down at Arroganz like a maiden in love.

Arroganz grabbed the head of the fallen white armor and lifted it up. Then it crushed the head in its grasp.

After that, it slammed the white armor of the ground many times.

The audiences screamed seeing that sight, but Leon was laughing.

[You guys are really small fries! It was the right decision that you guys didn't participate in the war against the principality. If you guys are only this strong, you would already get cut down by that black knight bastard and go to that world! You guys narrowly escaped death!]

The white armor Julius was riding got battered. At the end Arroganz threw it until it crashed and bounced several times on the ground.

When the five armors stopped moving, Arroganz slowly floated up to the sky.

[That's all, the exhibition match is finished! Don't forget that the winner of the duel is his highness Julius and others! Then everyone, have a nice day!]

After Leon finished saying that, he laughed loudly while flying away.

When Olivia hurriedly sent her gaze toward Ange and others, there was nobody there anymore.

"—What a dashing retreat. It makes me recall the past."

Was it really dashing? Even Olivia wasn't sure of that, but she was happy that Leon was acting like Lea.

Olivia overly evaluated Leon's action because of nostalgia and affection.

However even though she was in such a mood, her gaze became terribly cold when it turned toward the five armors on the ground.

"It's good that I can see Leon's true nature from this. Even you guys can be useful, so I won't abandon you yet. —But, you guys are really unsightly."

Olivia turned around and walked away from that place. She gave an order to the bewildered guards.

"Call Bartfalt-dono to my room immediately. Absolutely don't lay a hand on him at all. I won't tolerate any discourteous act toward him."

The female knights regained their senses after being given such order and saluted.

"As you command! B-but, his action toward his highness the crown prince is problematic. We have to report it to the palace immediately."

"No need. That's just an informal match. The duel ended with Julius and everyone's victory. Report only the victory to the palace."

"But, Bartfalt's action is unforgivable!"

"—You will bring him to me immediately won't you?"

When Olivia smiled, the disobedient attitude of the female knight just now softened.

Her cheeks reddened and her anger toward Leon who had behaved so outrageously toward a royalty vanished without a trace.

"Y-yes. I'll immediately bring him."

"Don't do it forcibly okay? Treat him with decorum—just like how you would treat a royalty."

Olivia only said that and left the arena.



"I MESSED UPPPPPPP!!"

"YOU IDIOTTTTTT!! There is no need to go that far!"

When I returned to Partner, I held my head in my wits' end while Marie slapped my head with a paper fan.

I planned to endure it at first.

However, his highness Julius's attitude and the surrounding's atmosphere—anyway, there were a lot of things that made me unable to endure.

The bastards who got full of themselves just from winning a fixed match really touched my nerve.

Also—they broke the promise so I wanted a payback.

There were also a lot of other problems.

The biggest one was Angelica-san.

"Forget about that, is Angelica-san angry? She is angry right?"

Marie slapped me with her paper fan again.

Marie slapped me with her paper fan again.

"She is angry, or rather, enraged? She is already furious now, she said that she absolutely won't forgive you when learning that you lost in purpose."

From Angelica-san's point of view, I joined the duel while holding back, so no wonder she was angry.

"She has nothing but enemy on all sides."

"It's your fault!"

"I'm sorry!"

\*Bam!\* The paper fan hit me. I could only laugh dryly.

Then a guest that we had been impatiently waiting for appeared at Partner.



"Don't screw with me. A fixed match in the sacred duel? Bartfalt, even you are toying with me! So you are only a man at that level!"

Angelica who was locked inside a cabin was venting her fury at the furniture inside.

When the door of the ransacked cabin opened, she glared at the intruder—and immediately got flustered.

"B-big brother!"

The one who came to check on her was her big brother Gilbert.

"Good grief, I'll need to compensate for this. I'll send him the apology and the reparation for the damages."

He looked over the cabin and let out a small sigh, but then his expression immediately turned grave.

"I heard that you challenged the saintess to a duel?"

"Please listen to me. She is the only person who we have to do something about. There's no doubt about that. Please, gather the troops. That woman isn't a saint or anything—"

"That saintess is acknowledged not only by the temple, but also by the palace. And you are telling me to gather soldiers to attack her? What are you saying? I sympathize with you that his highness abandoned you, but are you planning to destroy Redgrave House?"

"Big brother?"

Gilbert was looking at her coldly. Faced with that, Angelica crumbled on her knees.

Gilbert dispassionately explained the position of their family to her.

"Redgrave House is supporting the saintess. We have also accepted the annulment of your engagement with his highness. We aren't protesting at all."

"No way!"

"If only you didn't cause anything, we would be able to obtain a great amount of reparation from the palace. But thanks to you making a ruckus with this duel, even that talk has vanished. Good grief—just what are you trying to do, really?"

Angelica looked down and shed tears when she realized that she had caused a great bother to her family.

"I wanted to save his highness. It was just, for that person's sake."

"And this is the result? I had also consulted with father who is currently in recuperation, we decided to send you to the countryside. After all the palace also wouldn't accept it unless you get married off to an ugly man at the countryside."

Angelica who was once engaged with the crown prince would be wed with a countryside noble—furthermore an ugly one. That was a punishment in itself.

Perhaps the palace's side also felt some responsibility about this incident, because they didn't bring up any talk of execution.

Angelica listened to Gilbert's words without saying anything.

Gilbert left the room.

"It has been decided that you would be left at Bartfalt House for a while. Don't give him any more trouble than this. That's all I have to say. —Angelica, this is my advice for you as a brother. Rest for now."

After Gilbert left, tears spilled down from Angelica's eyes.

"Why am I—so powerless like this."



Thank god I explained the situation to Redgrave House.

I wanted them to take off Angelica-san from my hands, but for some reason things developed to me taking her back to my family home. I couldn't wrap my head around it.

I was talking with Gilbert-san on the deck.

"Thank you for the help."

"Your family saved my father in the battlefield. I'm just returning the favor."

It was a sincerity that I hoped a certain stupid prince somewhere could learn from.

The duke house was far more proper than I thought huh.

Gilbert-san told me the reason why she entrusted Angelica-san to me.

"I'm sorry but, please take care of my little sister. It's a bit hard shelter her right now, not only in the capital, but even in Redgrave House."

"It's not a problem but, is the marriage talk really true?"

I thought it was horrible that she would be forcefully married off like that. But when I said that, Gilbert-san looked at me with narrowed gaze.

"The family of your fiancée was crushed right?"

"Well, yes."

"Then, let's move the talk of marriage to be done with you. I'll be able to buy time with that."

"Time?"

It seemed that he had no intention of actually marrying Angelica-san with me. But, if there was a marriage talk like that with me, would it fulfill the condition of her marrying with an ugly man at the countryside?

Certainly I got a scar on my face, so it couldn't be helped even if I got called ugly but—somehow I couldn't just accept it.

"I won't break off my current engagement though."

"I won't ask you to go that far. But, I want you to protect my little sister. My family has too few ally right now."

In addition to the engagement cancellation, there was also the change of family head and various other things happening at the same time. It caused the strength of Redgrave House to greatly fall.

It looked like Gilbert-san also had it hard.

"Also Leon-kun, there is a summon from the palace to you. It seems that the saintess want to meet and talk with you directly."

"The saintess is?"

I myself wanted to meet with her, but it was actually the other side that summoned me?

Gilbert-san headed toward the ramp.

"Take a good care of my little sister."

"Aren't you going to tell her that you are worried for her?"

"She might run wild again if I carelessly give her even the slightest hope right now."

—Certainly it was worrying after witnessing the way she ran wild like that.



Marie and Ann were waiting when I returned to the cabin.

"You used your ability to look at my card aren't you!"

[I-I'm not.]

Seeing Marie playing card with a mass of resentment made me admired how unflappable she was.

When I came, Marie discarded the match that was heading to her lose and ran to me.

"How is it!?"

[You run away at this point!? You run away because you almost lose!]

This resentment too, she was getting too heated up in her game with Marie—well, it's fine I guess.

"Rejoice, I get a summon from the saintess. I can meet her openly."

"Doesn't it smell like a trap?"

"Don't say that. After all I'm also thinking the same."

Perhaps I should make a preparation to escape.

Ann approached us and asked about Olivia-san's condition.

[And, what do you two think about the saintess in your opinion?]

Marie couldn't make any judgment, but she was thinking in negative direction due to her instinct.

"She is being possessed I think? Or perhaps her personality has been bad since the

beginning? There is also the current situation, isn't it just too horrible right now? Things are still similar like in the scenario but, I also feels like it's not."

The whole academy was wrapped in a strange atmosphere. Even though we were winning the war, it felt like things were moving to a bad direction.

If the objective of Saintess Ann was to destroy the country, then was she succeeding in a sense?

But, my opinion was different.

"I think she isn't possessed though. In the first place, will she get engaged with the descendants of the guys she resented if that's the case? Besides, this flow of event is just like that otome game right? Rather than Olivia-san, isn't things worsening because the idiots around her are too horrible?"

I was considering that perhaps she wasn't being possessed?

No, that was what I was hoping for.

Even though things became like this, wasn't it just the result of the people around Olivia-san running wild?

After all the capture targets were more horrible than I expected.

Marie wasn't convinced and spoke about her opinion in more detail.

"How should I say it, that girl's words sounded flimsy."

"Her words sounded just like her lines in game right? Besides, do you think she will get engaged with the descendants of the guys she resented? What Saintess Ann wants to do is taking revenge."

"If it's me than it's impossible but, what if it's you?"

Marie asked for Ann's opinion. She gave an unexpected reply to that.

[If I can destroy the country by doing that, I'll do it. I'll do it thoroughly. Even though I resent them, hate them, if it's for the sake of destroying this country then I won't hesitate.]

I shuddered at that opinion that was filled with resentment. I also gave up thinking any further about this, in the end we couldn't judge the situation just with the information we had right now.

Marie asked me.

"More importantly, what happened with the information gathering robots that Luxion lent to us?"

"I have them investigating but, checking all the information they gathered is really time consuming."

They brought me a lot of information, but it was tiring checking them all with just Marie and me.

Also it was difficult to control them.

It would be great if we could monitor everything for days and nights, but even we had our own things to take care of.

"As I thought, we need AI to manage them. This would be easy if only Luxion is here."

Ann muttered.

[So in the end, it's still difficult to make the judgment huh. We can only leave this to Leon then.]



One day had passed since the duel commotion.

Olivia was waiting in her residence inside the academy. She was alone with even Kyle being sent out so she could dress herself.

Her attentive preparation since the morning was an expression of her expectation.

"Now then, I have to ask various things to Leon Fou Bartfalt. First I have to clearly confirm whether he really descended from Lea's bloodline or—tsu!"

Olivia was looking forward to the meeting, but her expression suddenly turned grave.

"Olivia, why are you suddenly coming out—no, stop!"

Olivia suddenly looked pained, but then a knocking sound could be heard.

[Saintess-sama, Leon Fou Bartfalt-dono has arrived.]

Olivia tried to tell the guard to make Leon waited for a while, but her mouth opened on its own.

"Se—send him in. I permit it."

When Olivia tried to cover her mouth, the resentment of Saintess Ann who was inside Olivia got sealed temporarily.



It was the day of my meeting with Olivia-san who had become a saintess.

When I entered the room, I found Olivia-san looking at her own hands.

She looked terribly surprised—no, more like she was shaken I guess?

Her breathing was also a bit rough, and her hair was slightly messy.

When she noticed me entering the room, she came running and leaped on my chest.

"Saintess-sama!?"

I was shocked and stiffened without giving my greeting but—Olivia-san was shedding tears.

"Sir knight, please save me."

"Eh?"

She called me sir knight and lifted her face while sobbing.

"Save me! Please save me. At this rate, I'm going to vanish completely. Sir knight, I'm begging you please save me. Please save me! I—I!"

Olivia-san tried to plead about something to me desperately. I grabbed her shoulder, but then the guards who noticed the abnormality opened the door and entered inside.

"Saintess-sama, what's wrong! —Y-you bastard, how dare you touch saintess-sama!"

The female knights unsheathed the sword on their waist and they were about to slash me.

"No, this is!"

While I was pondering of how I would get out of this situation, Olivia-san stepped forward to cover for me.

"Don't lay your hand on sir knight!"

"Saintess-sama?"

The female knights were shocked by Olivia-san's action and stepped back.

Olivia-san hugged me.

"I'm begging you. Please take me away from here. If not, I'll really—vanish"

Olivia-san was asking me for help, but her gaze suddenly turned hollow and her body crumbled down.

When I caught her body, the female knights came running and forcefully separated us.

And then they pointed their sword to me.

"You should leave here for today. Also, don't say a word about this to anyone else."

I was forcefully dragged outside and thrown out of the house.

"W-what the hell?"



A few hours later.

Olivia—no, Saintess Ann woke up from her unconsciousness.

She was lying on a bed with doctors and healing magic users surrounding her.

"Oo! The saintess has opened her eyes!"

The surrounding were making expression of relief. It was only Olivia who was feeling frustrated at the inside.

(—Olivia, I never expected for you to wake up at that timing of all time. What was the trigger?)

Even though she should have taken over this body, Olivia's consciousness was awakened due to some kind of impetus.

Saintess Ann told the people around her "I'll rest for a bit" and closed her eyes.

She sent her consciousness into her deep psyche. Olivia was there locked inside a prison.

And then Saintess Ann had the appearance of her form when she was called as saintess in the past.

Her appearance—looked really similar with Angelica with a white robe wrapped over her body.

She was looking down with a freezing expression on Olivia who was hanging down her head.

[Bad child. How did you slip out from here? Because of you my meeting with Lea was wasted.]

Olivia kept her gaze casted down.

Her arms and legs were chained. It didn't look like she could get out of this prison.

Tears were spilled out from her eyes.

"—Sir knight."

When Olivia muttered sir knight, a hazy figure of a man appeared inside this deep psyche.

[Is this your knight?]

The she reached out to touch that illusion, that figure vanished.

[Fuh—it's pointless regardless of who you ask help from. I'll have you accompany me till the very end.]

Then Olivia lifted her face and showed a strong-willed gaze.

"I won't let you do as you please. I swear that I'll take back my body and stop you."

She declared that she would stop Ann's dearest wish to destroy this country.

Ann narrowed her eyes.

[You still haven't given up? You are really a strong child. But—if you get in my way, I'll make you unable to oppose me thoroughly. Let's see—for the start, perhaps I'll try to make a bloodbath with this sir knight who act as the support of your heart? Now, tell me the name of that person.]

"N-no"

[It's pointless even if you oppose me. This place is inside your heart. The identity of that person will become clear to me sooner or later. I'm looking forward to that, Olivia.]

Ann then vanished from that place. Olivia bit her lower lip.

She recalled Leon's figure when he helped her during the field trip.

"Sir knight, please—stop that person."



"A lot of things happened."

It was spring break. I returned home after so long. I was at my wits' end with how many problems were cropping out.

My family got really panicked and busy because I came home with Angelica-san, and there was also the matter with Olivia-san.

Marie was also at her wits' end.

"What does she mean help? Just what does she want to be saved from? In the first place, is she being possessed or not? Make it clear."

Which state Olivia-san was in at that time?

To me she didn't look like she was being possessed. It looked like she was seriously asking me for help.

"Is she asking me to save her from his highness Julius and others?"

"She didn't show any sign like that during the duel though."

In the end we still couldn't make the judgment. Ann made her conclusion while we were worrying about that.

[—It's also possible that her body still haven't gotten taken over fully. If she is a girl who can even become the saintess, it won't be strange that she can oppose it somewhat.]

In other words, it could be that she was almost getting taken over completely?

"Then I guess we should save her immediately."

Marie tilted her head when I said that.

"How?"

"—I-I'm going to think how after this."

"You are really unreliable. How about calling Luxion back?"

"He won't answer even when I call him! That bastard, just where is he and what is he doing right now?"

While we were being noisy \*gyaa gyaa\* inside the room, the door opened and Korin

entered inside.

"Nii-chan, Marie, welcome back! Where is my souvenir?"

Korin had just returned from outside. It seemed he came running to our room when he learned that we had returned.

Ann had vanished before we realized it. Marie took a box of candy from the piled up mountain of souvenirs and handed it to Korin.

"Don't address me without honorific! Call me Onee-san(sister-in-law). You get it?"

"Ee~, the only one I'll call Onee-san is just Claris-san."

I got a headache at Korin's misunderstanding.

I should correct him quickly.

"Korin, don't say Claris-senpai's name so openly like that. Also, I'm not going to marry with that person okay?"

"Eh? Then, who is Nii-chan going to marry?"

Korin looked genuinely surprised. That made Marie's hair to stand on end angrily.

"It's with me! Just what do you think I am huh!?"

"Marie got angry. Run~"

"Wait you little brattttt! You absolutely won't get awayyyyy! There is nobody who can get away from me!"

Marie chased after the running Korin and got outside. I saw her off and shook my head.

"She is getting teased like that because their mental age is close."

Ann showed herself again with the two gone from here. She was showing skepticism at me.

[If you say that, that means you also have the same mental age with them with how

you always quarrel with Marie every time. Are you fine with that?]

"—Eh?"



In a room inside the palace.

Julius was lying on a bed with bandage wrapped all over his body.

"Unforgivable, Bartfalt. How dare you shamed me in front of Olivia."

Julius's anger toward Leon was stoked up. A part of it was also because he had just woken up.

It was fine and all that Leon lost in the duel just as planned, but them getting into that informal match after that was bad.

Leon displayed an overwhelming strength and won there. Now they were being suspected of holding a fixed match.

Certainly Leon kept his promise to lose in the duel, but his action after that was unforgivable.

Julius forgot that it was him who broke the promise first. He continued resting while seething with anger.

It was at such timing that a wounded Jilk who was using a crutch entered Julius's room.

But, from his expression he didn't come just to visit.

"Your highness, there is someone who I wish you to meet."

"—Jilk, you look really unsightly."

Julius didn't hide his irritation and vented his anger. Jilk frowned at that.

"Your highness is in the same state you know? More importantly, I come with an interesting person.—Enter."

Jilk was showing his disgruntle toward Julius by inviting a man to enter the room without even asking Julius for permission.

Julius was about to chase away the guest, but he felt doubtful when seeing the person who entered.

"Who?"

"Lutoart Fou Bartfalt. He is an elder brother of that Leon, the eldest son of Bartfalt House. It seems he lost in the struggle for the family headship and ended up being chased away from his house."

Julius observed Lutoart after hearing that.

Lutoart was showing a servile attitude. He had the same smell like the unpleasant bunches who always tried to curry favor with him.

"He lost the family headship despite being the eldest son? Why?"

Jilk's eyes when looking at Lutoart was also cold. It seemed that like Julius, he was also evaluating this person poorly.

"Even though he is the eldest son, he not only refused to participate in the war, he even did various other things like forgery of documents. There should be a limit in how foolish one can be—but, the information in his possession has some worth."

Julius glared at Lutoart.

"What information?"

Lutoart straightened his back, and then he acted ingratiatingly to butter up Julius.

"This information that I have is simply amazing your highness! After your highness heard it, your highness will definitely realize how beneficial it will be for you. After all this is information about that Leon's weakness!"

"Say it already!"

Julius shouted threateningly at Lutoart's useless preface, so Lutoart spoke in fear.

"Hii! It's Claris. I saw Claris of Atlee House in my family house. T-that guy, Leon is sheltering Claris in Bartfalt House."

Julius's eyes widened hearing that.

"Claris of Atlee House you say? That woman, she is still alive?"

Even though it was a matter about his former fiancée, Jilk was talking as though it wasn't his business at all.

"I considered the possibility of him mistaking the person, but he heard that person got called Claris when he was in his family house. Her appearance is also really similar."

Julius narrowed his eyes.

"This isn't a fake information?"

Jilk's lips twisted into a malicious grin.

"Even if that's the case, it'll be just a destruction of a single countryside baron isn't it? We're just going to erase a single countryside noble who opposed the kingdom by sheltering a criminal."

Julius hesitated to reply because that sounded too forceful to do, but then all expression vanished from Jilk's face.

"Your highness—that Leon has met with Olivia-san. According to the report that I heard from a female knight who I'm close with, it seems that she saw the two of them embracing each other. Apparently Olivia-san forbid everyone to say a word about it, but that's just even more proof of how much she thought about him."

Something snapped inside Julius when he heard that.

"He laid his hand on Olivia? Why haven't the palace heard anything about it?"

"It's because of Olivia-san's order. But, if we keep leaving him alone like this, he will settle in to be the sixth person sooner or later. Even your highness won't be able to tolerate that correct?"

Jilk—wanted to crush Leon now that a possibility of him marrying Olivia appeared.

Because of that, he suggested to Julius to crush Bartfalt House.

Lutoart's information was simple an excuse for that.

Julius made his decision.

"Very well. But, take care of this matter carefully. Kill that guy without fail. Don't cut any corner at all for that."

"As you command!"

Jilk left the room. Then Lutoart who was left behind raised his hand.

"Y-your highness? Um, about my reward?"

Julius glared at Lutoart, and then he gave him a verbal promise.

"After Leon is killed, I'll give the remaining territory to you. Any complaint?"

"N-no!"

Lutoart left the room. Then Julius pressed his right hand on his face.

"I'll remove any fool who dare to lay his hand on Olivia. Olivia—is mine alone."



Marie and I entered the hot spring to heal our fatigue that had accumulated recently. After that we walked outside.

"Aa~, I want to drink sake."

"You speak like a middle-aged uncle. I prefer shochu highball myself. I can't drink with this body though."

"Haa? We are already adult in our world you know? Just drinking sake shouldn't be any problem at all."

"I'll refrain until I'm twenty years old. Or rather, in the first place I wasn't really a heavy drinker."

I almost never drank alcohol even in the previous world.

Sometimes I would, but it was only when I got invited to drink.

Marie was exasperated at my story.

"You are really similar with my big brother in the previous life. Big bro also didn't drink much alcohol and did nothing except playing gal game."

"Don't group me with your big bro. But, it feels like I'll be able to have some talk with him. Though I also played other game than gal game."

Marie's big bro in her previous life was apparently a dangerous man who might do something messed up if he got angry.

I didn't want to be confused as such guy, but if he liked to play game than I guess we might be able to have something to talk about at least.

—Even so, Marie was completely the same like my little sister.

Marie was thinking of what she was going to drink when she returned to the mansion.

"I want to eat yakitori today. Ah, beer might be better for that!"

"You are also really similar with my little sister you know? That girl, she would drink every night once she got a taste for an alcohol."

Marie made a really disgusted face when I talked about my little sister in the previous life.

"Stop that. Leon's little sister in the previous life was like that wasn't she? A woman who liked to play innocent right? Don't group me with that kind of detestable fellow. But, if she also like to drink than she might become a good drinking partner. I'll punch her if she is just a hypocrite woman though."

"Then it would surely become a fist fight. You two are completely the same after all."

"I'm telling you're wrong! If I could live skillfully like your little sister, I would be able to enjoy my life even more mon!"

Mon! She said. You, how old were you again at the inside?

We were walking on the road at night. The robot that was floating in front of us was illuminating the path.

Marie turned her gaze toward the idyllic scenery of the floating island.

"Ah, firefly."

"It's a bug that looks similar with firefly. It's not an actual firefly."

The insect that was radiating light was only flying around. It gave a very tasteful feeling to the scenery.

Marie kicked at pebble on the road with her sandal.

"Even so, everything is really troublesome isn't it? The saintess's items are actually cursed items, then the saintess might be possessed."

"If only the world is more fantasy like and full with sweet dreams. Or a worl like in gal game, that will be far better."

"You are stupid. There is no convenient world for man like that. The woman that is in man's imagination is just a fictional creature."

"It's 2D so it's accurate to call them fictional, but that statement can stab back at you. From a man's perspective, otome game is also just a bunch of nonsense after all."

"I can differentiate between fiction and reality."

"As the result of that, you went out with the ideal man in game while meeting failures in reality. Ouch!?"

Marie kicked my butt when I laughed at her.

The pain reverberated until my bone. Marie glared at me while I was holding my butt.

"Don't put on air you virgin. You were also a virgin at the previous life right?"

"W-why are you baselessly accusing me as virgin!? I'll sue you!"

"Your reaction is the proof."

We were glaring at each other. Then I got tired and averted my face.

"Let's stop this unproductive argument. None of us will get out unscathed from it."

"Guess so. Let's refrain from saying anything that just pour salt on each other's wound."

We decided to stop talking about the past because we would just gouge out each other's wound.

We walked on the road at night alone.

The path was only made from hardened soil. Marie then quietly stretched out her hand.

I grabbed that hand and walked while pulling Marie behind me.

The short Marie fastened her pace to catch up with me.

I slowed down my pace in consideration to her.

"—There are a lot of troubles, but we will surely manage somehow, right?"

Marie muttered that uneasily, so I cracked a joke to reassure her.

I wanted to reassure her, and also to persuade myself.

"This is a world of that otome game right? The last boss is also gone already, so how can it get any worse than this. At the end we will get at least the better ending."

The last boss had been dealt with.

What was left was just to solve the problem with the saintess.

I told myself like that.

What was important for me was—to protect my current environment.

Marie strongly gripped my hand.

"You're, right. Surely it will be fine won't it?"

"What's more can happen after this? We will get busy in dealing with the saintess at the new term, so let's rest for now while we can."

"Yeah! Ah, I'm hungry. Let's get back quickly and eat."

"That's the only thing in your mind huh."

We walked on the road while laughing and returned to the mansion at night.



"We're back~. What's for dinner?"

When we returned home and I made such lighthearted remark, Claris-senpai wearing a maid uniform came running.

Behind her there were also the male seniors who were Claris-senpai's followers following her.

It seemed that they were helping out in my family's mansion every day.

But, everyone was making a grave expression.

"Leon-kun, it's trouble."

"Is there some kind of accident?"

I got a bad feeling wondering what happened this time. From Claris-senpai's expression, surely it wasn't good news at all.

It seemed that Claris-senpai's family, Atlee House was still in contact with her even now through master.

Because of that, it wouldn't be strange for her to get some kind of information.

I had enough already in my plate without anything more happening, but then Claris-

senpai said something that I didn't expect at all.

"Alzer Commonwealth is destroyed."

"—That's a lie right?"

When I turned my gaze to Marie, she looked dazed and couldn't make any voice.

According to Marie, that place was "the stage of that otome game's sequel", but that country that would become such a stage was destroyed?

Claris-senpai was getting a fright.

"It's true. The palace is also in commotion right now like a poked beehive. Also, there is a bad rumor spreading."

There was still more!?

"This is an uncertain information but, it seems the palace is having dissatisfaction with Bartfalt House, no, with Leon-kun. There is a rumor that they are moving to subjugate you. What did you do?"

Unpleasant cold sweat covered my body even though I had just gotten out of hot spring.

Marie also froze with a pale face.

My gaze swam around while I said what came to mind.

"—I beat up his highness Julius after the duel."

Claris-senpai put her hand on her forehead. The seniors behind her also made a face that seemed to say "Just what the hell are you doing?".

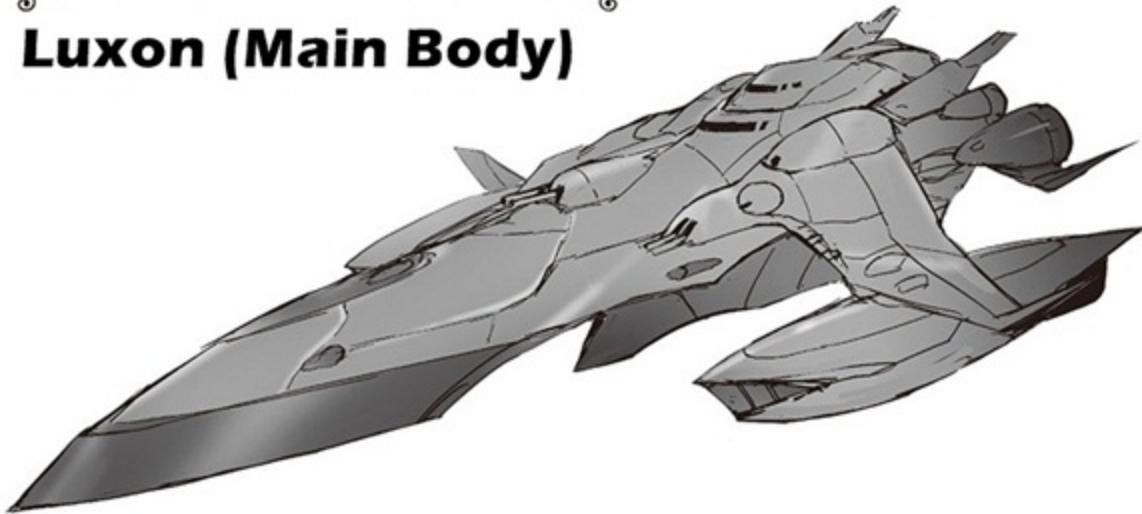
Eh? Could it be, I would get subjugated by the country?

To be continued

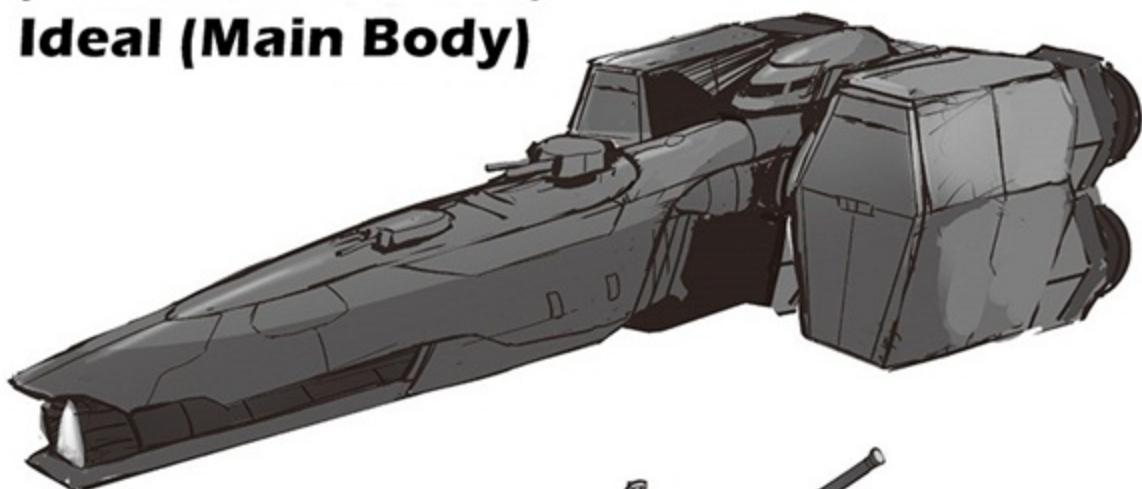
 **Serge's Mounted Armor**



— Luxon (Main Body) —

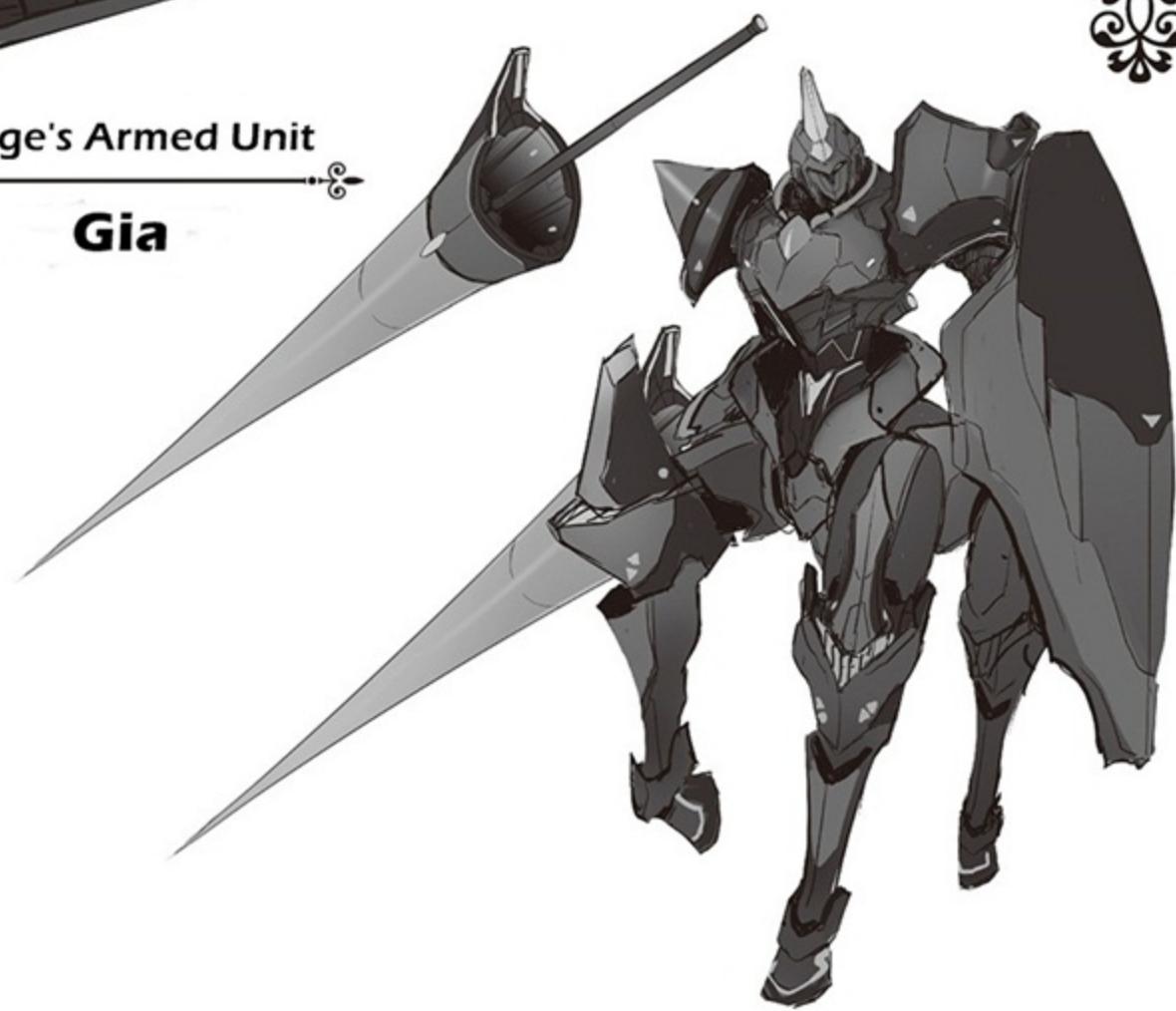


— Ideal (Main Body) —



Serge's Armed Unit

**Gia**





PtFF by: traktorA7EN